

The Truth of God's Providence

President Kim Young Hwi's Testimony

Planning publication
Moonyoung



Preface

Greetings to all blessed families who will read this book. My name is Kim Young Hwi, and my wife is Jung Dae Wha. After living for about two years at our son's home in Virginia, near the capital city of Washington, in early May, we returned to our home country. I feel that it is a natural course of life for elderly parents to live with their children. This is also a teaching from True Father given to our elder members. However, because I felt uneasy about what was going on in Korea, we decided to return to Father's homeland, Korea.

Currently, the world is in a state of extreme turmoil, and the COVID-19 pandemic has resulted in many people falling victim to this dangerous era. Moreover, due to the period of limited face-to-face interaction, it has been difficult to meet and have direct conversations with the people we should meet or want to meet. Now, the situation seems to have slightly improved, and we feel a little relieved. I hope all of you take care of your health and stay encouraged.

At the request of pastors and elder members, I have conducted lectures on True Father's life course, which are included in this book, several times. Based on the compiled contents of those lectures, I have supplemented the manuscript and decided to publish this book upon my return to Korea.

I understand True Father's life course to be divided into six stages. Among them, the second stage, which is presented in detail in this publication, is the most crucial and significant in terms of providential significance. Therefore, I hope that by first documenting the content of the second stage as lectures and writings, it will serve as a reference for our members to gain a more accurate understanding of the Divine Principle and the providential work of God in appointing True Father as the returning Lord for the salvation providence. Of course, if possible, I would like to share materials on the other five stages as well.

However, I emphasize once again that the second stage is the most urgent part. Therefore, it is included as the first part of this book, along with a short section on the "Principled Definition of God."

In the second part, I have compiled lectures that reflect on the importance of the Blessing providence for the salvation of humankind in the spirit world from a providential perspective. Particularly, I have clarified my views on the confused situation of the Unification Family since Father's Seonghwa, and I have

summarized recent lectures that discuss the responsibilities that blessed families should fulfill during True Father's providential age on Earth. Finally, I have added my own testimony of faith regarding God's work and grace during the turbulent period from my birth to my Blessing Marriage.

In conclusion, I pray for the good health and well-being of all of you.

June 2022

Kim Young Hwi

Seoul

▣ congratulatory poem

President Kim Young Hwi, Witness of God's Providence!

-Regarding the publication of *The Truth of God's Providence*-

Yoon Deok Myung |

Member of the Korean Writers Association,
Director of the monthly magazine *Literary Thought*,
Honorary Professor at Sun Moon University, Former Senior Pastor

Like a small boat adrift on a vast ocean, even when on the verge of being shattered by fierce storms at the critical point in God's providence, the high-noontime settlement casts no shadow, and a whirlwind of the Holy Spirit's gaze, like sparks, occurs.

On April 20, 1955, the day you descended from heaven, shining in golden glory, the colder the biting wind of the first day of the month, the more you accumulated patience with an indomitable spirit. Looking back on that time, in the midst of bitter turmoil and twists and turns, that place in Cheongpa-dong was as fervent as the attic in the home of the Apostle Mark.

Through the discord between Cain and Abel, brought about by the disbelief of the human ancestors, human history became a hyperbolic curve of the struggle between good and evil, and it became the touchstone for the completion of the providence of

restoration, your absolute inviolable territory and consistent original goal.

During the early stages, in the wandering days of youth, you graduated from the prestigious Seoul National University and resolutely rejected the temptations of worldly glory and splendor, leading the charge as the 2nd, 4th, and 6th President of the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification on the battleground of God's providence.

If this course were to deviate and transform into flattering tales like *The Emperor's New Clothes*, or *The Song of the Dragon Soaring to the Heavens*, your boundless love and sincerity would crumble as well. However, because ours is a community of heartfelt respect and gratitude, true love, true life, and true lineage are at the core of heavenly ethics and human ethics.

Eu Hyowon, Kim Wonpil, and Kim Young Hwi, who were established as the three pillars of the providence of restoration! Two of them are in the Kingdom of Heaven, and you, as the central axis remaining on this earth, grasp the deep meaning of their true nature and, in the end, all the water on earth will reach the vast ocean.

The distorted history of the exchange of words that occurs during the process of the providence of restoration and the spiritual tasks

revealed in the spirit world will surely appear in the near future through *The Truth of God's Providence*. Therefore, I pray with clasped hands that today's difficulties will be resolved as part of your mission.

As the President, who has experienced a heavenly course full of hardships and adversity that make one's heart burn, and who shines as a luminous sun that swallows up the darkness, I hope you will become an oasis in the desert, the source spring of the Unification Family, for spiritually thirsty hearts.

Monday July 4, 2022, Cheongpa-dong Former HQ Church,
Yoon Deok Myung

Table of Contents

preface ·3
congratulatory poem ·6
Table of Contents ·9

■ Part 1 ■

1. Father's Providential Course in North Korea ·17

1) John the Baptist Christian Groups and the Course of the
Second Advent ·17
The Six Stages of Father's Life Course ·17
Kim Baekmun's Disbelief ·21
Marriage with Ms. Choe Seongil ·28
Holy Lord Church-Inside Abdomen Church and Heo Hobin's Disbelief ·41

2) Disbelief of the John the Baptist Groups and the Suffering of the
Lord of the Second Advent ·49
The Suffering of the Lord of the Second Advent, the Three Great Trials,
and the Restoration of the Three Great Blessings ·51
Grandmother Ji Seungdo (池承道: 1895-1988) ·57

3) Inheriting the Mission of Jesus ·58
Father's Re-Imprisonment on February 22, 1948 ·60
The Unconditional Love for Father of His Mother and Elder Brother ·70
The Testimony of Mr. Kim Inho ·76
The Testimony of Mr. Park Jeonghwa (朴正華) ·86

- 4) The United Nations Participates in the Korean War, June 25, 1950
 -God's Providence to Rescue the Lord of the Second Advent ·91
 The Outbreak of the Korean War and Heungnam Labor Camp ·91
 Liberation from Heungnam Labor Camp ·93
 Father's Thoughts about Life in Heungnam Labor Camp ·94
 From Heungnam to Pyeongyang where Father's Followers Were Located ·97
 Father Composes the Lyrics for Holy Song Number 2, "New Song of Holy Concern" (New Song of Inspiration) ·98
 Forty-Day Sojourn in Pyeongyang ·100
 Father Composes the Lyrics for Holy Song Number 3, "Gift of Glory" (Blessing of Glory) ·104
 Heading South as Refugees from Pyeongyang ·105
 What Happened at Yongmae Island (Yongmae-do) and Prayers at the 38th Parallel ·107
 From Seoul to Busan ·111
- 5) Refugee Life in Busan and Writing the "Original Divine Principle" ·115
 Mr. Eom Deokmun's Testimony ·115
 Mount Sujeong Holy Ground in Busan (釜山 水晶山 聖地) ·124
 Building a Small Hut in Beomnaetgol, Busan ·126
 Father Composes the Lyrics of Korean Holy Song Number 4 "Powers Enveloped in Darkness" (English Holy Song Number 23, "Suffering Heart") ·129
 Evangelist Kang Hyeonsil, the First Convert in Busan ·130
 Evangelist Kang Hyeonsil's Three-day Experience of Hell ·136
 The Wavering Heart of Evangelist Kang Hyeonsil ·138
 Pastor Lee Yohan's Conversion ·142
 Elder Lee Bongun's Family Joins the Church and the Enlargement of the Sujeong-dong Church Building ·145
 The Reason Father Wrote Holy Song Number 5, "The Garden of Restoration" (English Holy Song Number 4) ·148

The Reason Father Wrote Holy Song Number 6, “Grace of the Holy Garden” (English Holy Song Number 2) ·149

The First Forty-day Pioneering Evangelism in Daegu ·150

President Eu Hyowon Joins the Church ·154

- 6) Founding of the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity ·158
Chart of True Father’s Heavenly Providential Course (天路歷程) ·161

2. Principled Definition of God ·162

God -the One and Only Father ·162

Only One Person Is the Supreme Decision Maker ·167

The Messiah Comes as One Person ·171

The Meaning of Father’s Marriage with Ms. Choe Seongil ·173

The Essential Requirement for the Course of the Lord of the Second Advent Is the Discovery and Elucidation of the Principle ·177

The Messiah is the Original Adam without Original Sin ·180

The Restoration of Eve Is the Responsibility of Adam ·184

Let Us Not Forget the One God ·186

■ Part 2 ■

1. Ancestor Liberation and Ancestor Blessing Ceremony and the Governance of the Heavenly World ·191

The Value of Ancestor Liberation and Ancestor Blessing ·191

The Providence of the Blessing for Earthly Humans ·192

Beginning of the Blessing for Spirits ·195

The Major Operation that Shakes Hell ·198
The “Coronation Ceremony for the Kingship of God” and
the Restoration of Canaan ·202
Ancestor Liberation and Ancestor Blessing Are Actual Works to
Save Spirits ·205
The Word of Truth, Witnessing, and the Blessing ·209
The Church Where Hope Is Realized ·212

2. The Last Days and Satan’s Natural Submission ·217

Introduction ·217
Nostradamus’ Last Prophecy ·218
Satan’s Natural Submission in 1999 ·219
The National Victory over Communism Rally and Heungjin Nim’s
Seonghwa ·220
Satan Who Ruled Mankind for 60,000 Years ·222
Father’s Greatest Mission ·223
The Blessing Providence of Spirit Persons and Earthly Persons ·224
The Blessing of 1.6 Billion Pairs of Spirit Persons and the Spirit World
Training Center ·226
The Blessing of 4.6 Billion Pairs of Spirit Persons and the Unification
Blessing Ceremony of the Spirit World and Physical World ·229
Eradication of Satan’s Lineage and Satan’s Natural Submission ·231
Ancestor Liberation and Blessing of the 210th and 430th Generations ·234
Conclusion ·238

3. Why Is the Messiah Born without Original Sin? ·240

Realizing the Problems with Kim Jinchun’s Recent Special Lecture ·240
Marriage Motives of Father and Ms. Choe Seongil ·243

The Familial Requirements Necessary to Be Born without Original Sin ·245
The Intervention of God's Vertical Love at Conception ·248
Married Couple Love Completes the Maturation of the Individual ·249
The Providential Path that Must Be Followed and Making a Successor ·251
Let Us Get to Know Father Correctly and Reveal the Truth ·254

4. The Enemies of God-Atheism, Materialism, Evolutionism ·258

Public Opinion Supporting Korea's Possession of the Atomic Bomb ·258
The Blessing of the First Three Pairs of Spirit Persons ·259
The Era of Opening the Blessing of the Spirit World and the Blessing of Ancestors ·261
The Work of Earthly Cooperation with Ancestors in the Spirit World ·263
See and Know Who the Enemies of God Are ·265
Forces against God ·266
Main Causes of the Confusion in the Unification Family and Their Solutions ·268
You Must Know Satan's Strategy and Tactics ·270
Time of Earthly History and Father's Organization of the Spirit World ·271
What Blessed Families Should Do Now ·272

5. Speaking out about How Kim Jinchun Is Destroying the "True Parent Ideal" ·274

Kim Jinchun's Lecture Contents
-Transcription of the Original Text, April 20, 2022 ·290

6. Testimony of How I Joined the Church ·298

The Beginning ·298

My Father's Dream and My Birth	·299
My Father's Marriage and Double Bereavement	·300
Farewell to My Birth Mother and Stepmother	·302
An Upright, Magnanimous, and Strong-Willed Father	·304
My Father's Brother's Business Acumen	·306
Going to School in Seoul and the Heukseok-dong House	·308
Recuperation in My Hometown and Liberation on August 15, 1945	·311
Leaving My Hometown and the Road to Seoul	·312
Life Right After Liberation and the Outbreak of the Korean War on June 25, 1950	·314
The Miracle of the Family Reunion at Cheonan Station	·316
The First Miracle during the Days of the Busan Evacuation	·318
One More Miracle in Busan	·320
Working as an Interpreter for the U.S. Engineer Combat Battalion	·321
Working as an Interpreter at the Headquarters of the UN Civil Aid Investigation Command in Seoul	·323
Air Force Service and Study in Busan	·324
Transfer to Seoul and Joining the Unification Church	·325
My Father's Relationship with True Father during the Evacuation Course	·327
Education and Training of Power Generation Engineers in the United States	·332
Samcheok Power Plant Work and Pioneering Churches	·334
Third National Missionary Retreat and Three Families' Blessing	·336
Conclusion	·338

Part 1



1. Father's Providential Course in North Korea

2. Principled Definition of God



1. Father's Providential Course in North Korea

1) John the Baptist Christian Groups and the Course of the Second Advent

In the first part of this book, I would like to attest to the early work of True Father, Reverend Sun Myung Moon. It is my honor to have been given the opportunity to share this testimony, and I sincerely hope that those who read it will find it helpful in understanding True Father. (Henceforth, True Father will be referred to simply as Father).

The Six Stages of Father's Life Course

What I will describe here pertains to two things, namely, the most important providence in Father's life course, and the most important tasks that our blessed families should do at this present time.

First of all, I would like to divide Father's life course into six stages as follows:

The first stage begins with his birth on January 6, 1920 (25th day of the 2nd lunar month, 1920) and concludes with Korea's liberation on August 15, 1945, spanning a period of twenty-five years, five months, and twenty-one days.

The second stage encompasses the period from Korea's liberation until the completion of the providence in North Korea, which included the failure of the providence for the Christians to unify with Father in Korea, leading to Father going to North Korea at God's command, being incarcerated in a labor camp, and then once again returning to South Korea. Then after the providence in Busan, Father went to Daegu and then Seoul, ultimately founding the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity on May 1, 1954; a period totaling eight years, eight months, and sixteen days.

The third stage begins from May 1, 1954 to April 11, 1960, when Father becomes the True Parent based on God's Blessing to conduct the Marriage of the Lamb. This period lasted five years, eleven months and ten days.

The fourth stage is from the Holy Wedding of True Parents to the Coronation Ceremony for the Kingship of God on January 13, 2001. This was a period of forty years, nine months and two days.

The fifth stage is from the Coronation Ceremony for the Kingship of God to the Cheonjeong Palace Entrance Ceremony and the Coronation of True Parents, King of Peace in Heaven and on

Earth on June 13, 2006. This was a period of five years and five months.

Finally, the sixth stage of Father's life course is from the Cheonjeong Palace Entrance Ceremony to Father's Seonghwa on September 3, 2012. This was a period of six years, two months and twenty days.

Father ascended four months and ten days before Foundation Day. The following section will extensively cover the second stage of Father's Life Course.

It is necessary to understand why the second stage is so important. This period represents Father's providential course to North Korea, where Father risked his life. In the first stage, there was no need to risk his life. The same applies to the third, fourth, fifth, and sixth stages.

Although there were certainly other dangerous times, the period when Father faced the providence with a readiness to die was the second stage. Therefore, if we do not properly understand the second stage, we cannot truly understand Father. I will now explain the period from the liberation at the end of the colonial era to May 1, 1954, when Father founded the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity, which spans eight years, eight months, and sixteen days.

While Father's official providential course began with the liberation, he had already started researching Christianity before that. This is because Father's initial mission was to unite with the Christian denominations prepared by God for the coming of the

Messiah, and this formed the foundation of his providential work. True Father was well aware that in order to unite with the Christian denominations, he had to study Christianity extensively.

It was necessary to know what kind of leaders existed within the Christian denominations. Without that knowledge, it would have been impossible to seek the path to unity.

Jesus, who came to the earth as the Messiah before Father, had a providential responsibility to unite with the Jewish religious community and the Jewish people prepared by God. However, although Jesus made every effort to fulfill this mission, the Jewish religious community failed to unite with him. Due to the lack of faith of the Jewish religious leaders and the Jewish people, Jesus was sentenced to death and crucified.

Father also faced the possibility of such a fate. Therefore, he studied the Christian denominations from various angles, determined to restore through indemnity and succeed where Jesus had failed in uniting with the Jewish religious community.

Father ascended, or had his Seonghwa, at the earthly age of ninety-three. Until his ascension, Father proclaimed the words of truth regarding God, which humanity had not known before. Father achieved various providential accomplishments that were extremely challenging for a human being and ultimately ascended. However, even now, the Christian denominations do not recognize Father as the Messiah. Instead, Father is rejected as a heretic.

Even someone who proclaimed so many words of truth and achieved such great accomplishments in God's providence as Father is not believed to be the Messiah. At the time of the liberation of

Korea in 1945, Father was still a young man of only twenty-five. At that time, the Principle had not yet been fully revealed, and he had no significant accomplishments. In such a situation, who among the Christians would have believed that Father was the Messiah? Moreover, many believers in Christianity expected the Messiah to come on the clouds and even believed that the same Jesus Christ would return. They did not believe that the Messiah would come to Korea.

At that time, even if an unknown young Korean proclaimed himself to be the Messiah, there would have been no one who believed him. That is why Father began to search for a spiritual group within the Christian denominations that understood the essential content regarding God's providence and was earnestly offering prayers connected with God.

Kim Baekmun's Disbelief

There were many pastors in both North Korea and South Korea. As a result of investigating what the prominent pastors were teaching and what they believed, Father came to know that Pastor Kim Baekmun was a pastor of the highest level, who was closest to knowing the truth of God's providence.

In the past, Kim Baekmun (金百文, 1917-1990) had been detained for refusing to worship at a (Shinto) shrine, and as a disciple of Pastor Baek Namju (白南柱, 1901-1949) had inherited the

faith of mysticism. Pastor Baek Namju advocated for the reform of the Christian Church and was one of three people who founded the New Jesus Church together with Pastor Lee Yongdo (1901-1933) and Pastor Lee Hobin (李浩彬, 1898-1989) in Pyeongyang in June 1930.

Pastor Lee Yongdo considered Pastor Baek Namju his teacher, and Pastor Baek Namju called Pastor Lee Yongdo a true companion. It is said that Pastor Baek Namju created the foundation of the articles of faith (*sinjeon* 信典) and the constitution of the Jesus Church. As a representative of the newly established Jesus Church, Lee Yongdo, originally a Methodist revivalist, took the position of the missionary director (*seondogam* 宣道監). While criticizing the ritualization of the Christian Church, he practiced unconditional and indiscriminating love. Lee Yongdo led enthusiastic evangelical rallies across the country. In a short period of only three years and three months after its founding, the Jesus Church developed 25 churches and evangelized 200,000 believers.

After having founded the New Jesus Church in June of 1930, Pastor Lee Yongdo died in October 1933. Thus his evangelical activity period was only a short period of three years and three months. Moreover, during the Japanese Colonial Period in the 1930s, Korea was underdeveloped, and it must have been incredibly difficult to evangelize because of the difficulty of traveling around the country. It was truly miraculous to achieve such a result considering that there were no transportation networks or proper roads, almost no trains or buses, and no communication methods such as telephones.

Father's evaluation of Pastor Lee Yongdo was that he was a Jesus-like figure and that he had lived a life resembling that of Jesus both in his way of life and how he had walked a public course for three years from the age of thirty until his death at the age of thirty-three. Pastor Lee Yongdo died in October 1933, and Pastor Lee Hobin took over as the second missionary director of the New Jesus Church.

It is said that after his death, Pastor Lee Yongdo spiritually descended on Pastor Kim Baekmun and passed on his mission to him. Pastor Baek Namju graduated from the Presbyterian Theological Seminary in Pyeongyang in March 1930 and established a monastery and private seminary called the Wonsan Theological Seminary (Wonsan Sinhaksan 元山神學山) in Wonsan in September 1933. Pastor Kim Baekmun visited Wonsan Theological Seminary in 1934 and met Pastor Baek Namju.

After founding the articles of faith (*sinjeon* 信典) and the constitution of the New Jesus Church in 1935, Baek Namju took his disciple, Pastor Kim Baekmun, and went to Cheolsan, North Pyeongan Province, and met the Saeju sect that was centered on Grandmother Kim Seongdo (金聖道). At that time, Baek Namju and Kim Baekmun received a revelation from heaven instructing them not to wear shoes, so they went barefoot. Baek Namju registered Kim Seongdo's new sect as a religious corporation with the Government-General of Joseon, and it was authorized under the name 'Holy Lord Church.' Baek Namju worked together on activities with Kim Seongdo for a while, but this did not last for a long time. I do not clearly know what transpired after that, but Baek Namju

fled to South Korea in 1946, where he lived as a teacher until his death just before the outbreak of the Korean War on June 6, 1950.

Kim Baekmun founded the Jesus Israel Monastery in Paju in 1945 and then established the Israel Monastery, Seoul Church in Sangdo-dong, Seoul. This Seoul Church was a simple meeting place in a house provided by one of the followers of the church. From October 1945, Father attended the Jesus Israel Monastery led by Pastor Kim Baekmun as an assistant leader. The church had one assembly in Sangdo-dong in Seoul and another in Paju.

Father moved to Sangdo-dong, which is a twenty-to-thirty-minute walk from Heukseok-dong and a few minutes away from the Israel Monastery Seoul Church. Father lived there with his wife, Ms. Choe Seongil, and did not often go to the Jesus Israel Monastery in Paju. Kim Baekmun occasionally came to the Seoul Church to worship. Additionally, at this location during Father's middle school days when he attended the Jesus Church and Myeongsu Grand Church was Ms. Lee Gibong (李奇鳳), the owner of the boarding house in Heukseok-dong, and her third daughter, Im Namsuk (林南淑, sixteen years old at the time).

Father worked hard under Pastor Kim Baekmun as an assistant leader for six months. During his time as assistant leader of the Israel Monastery's Seoul Church, Father was in charge of the Wednesday and Sunday evening worship services and occasionally took charge of the Sunday worship service during the day. The number of worshipers was usually between forty and fifty people.

During the worship service on March 2, 1946 at the Israel

Monastery in Paju, between 11 a.m. and 12 p.m., Jesus Christ suddenly appeared around 11:30 a.m. Kim Baekmun wrote about this event in the book, "Fundamental Principles of Christianity" published on March 2, 1958. He recalled being at the center of the place of worship when Jesus Christ instantaneously manifested. However, there are parts of this historic event Kim Baekmun did not record. Left out of the record was the fact that he had received a revelation that day, laid his hands on Father's head in front of the worship service attendees gathered there, and had prayed the following blessing in a loud and thunderous voice: "He who comes in the glory of King Solomon."

The reason Jesus appeared before Pastor Kim Baekmun put his hand on Father's head was to show that God had sent Jesus and that Pastor Kim Baekmun's testimony was made through God's revelation. It should also be noted that when Pastor Kim Baekmun testified about Father on March 2, 1946, Father had, in fact, already married Ms. Choe Seongil on May 4, 1944.

In a sermon given on March 2, 1979, Kim Baekmun explained that prior to the appearance of Jesus on March 2, 1946, a spiritual finger had appeared on the wall of his dormitory at 3 a.m. on January 6. This dormitory was a short distance from the Israel Monastery in Paju. Then, on March 2, the letters forming the phrase "Death and Creation Are Divided" were written. Telling only a few people about this, Kim Baekmun began making preparations a week before March 2. Additionally, members of the Seoul Church participated together in the March 2 event.

Two thousand years ago, John the Baptist testified about Jesus but did not follow him. The same thing happened on March 2 when Kim Baekmun conducted the blessing testimony but failed to ask Father why such a revelation had come and did not follow him. Furthermore, there were three other women who testified that Father was the Messiah but did not follow him.

Father assisted Pastor Kim Baekmun at the Jesus Israel Monastery, zealously praying while doing church work with devotion. The following year on March 2, 1946, as mentioned above, Pastor Baekmun Kim received the revelation from the spirit world and conducted the blessing testimony. According to the testimony of a person who was there at the time, Kim Baekmun shouted in such a loud and thunderous voice that everyone in attendance was astonished. Clearly, this was not done quietly, but was shouted so loudly that everyone could hear it. After having shouted and testified in such a manner, Pastor Kim Baekmun should have attended and followed Father, but he could not do so. Despite having personally testified by revelation, Pastor Kim Baekmun continued to go his own way. Father had expectations for this church, but because they were not fulfilled, Father had no choice but to leave that place.

Since there was no change in Pastor Kim Baekmun's attitude, after some time, revelations from heaven started to descend to some of the members of the church. Up until that point, they had served Pastor Kim Baekmun, but they began to receive revelations that they should follow Master Moon and not Pastor Kim. Based on this, a division among the members began to

arise between those who had received such revelations and those who had not. Father's purpose in going there had not been to divide or split up the church, rendering it useless. He went so that the whole church could unite and proceed with the providence together with Father. However, since the division began, Father determined that he could no longer proceed with God's providence there, and in early April 1946, he left the Jesus Israel Monastery.

Even though Pastor Kim Baekmun testified that Father was the Second Advent of Christ, by not becoming Father's disciple and following him, he placed himself in the same position as John the Baptist in Jesus' day. John the Baptist had also testified that Jesus was the Messiah at the Jordan River but had not stood in a position to become a disciple and serve Jesus. They both continued on their own path as they had before their testimonies, and both Jesus and Father had no choice but to depart on their own ways, alone. It is imperative to know the reason why John the Baptist and Pastor Kim Baekmun did not follow the Lord about whom they had testified.

Typically, spiritual mediums think that it is their responsibility to proclaim a revelation from heaven as it is, but they will not do anything if it is not instructed from heaven. In other words, they think that they have fulfilled their responsibility as long as they have proclaimed the revealed word and that they are not required to do anything else. Because there was no revelation from heaven to become a disciple, to serve and follow, and walk the course together with Jesus or

Father, they did not do so. Spiritual mediums do not know they should come to realize what they must accomplish with their own wisdom, and fulfill it based on their own portion of responsibility. This has always been a problem in the history of the providence of salvation.

Marriage with Ms. Choe Seongil

Father married Ms. Choe Seongil on May 4, 1944, before the liberation of Korea. Pastor Lee Hobin was the officiant presiding over the ceremony. We should know why Father got married before the liberation. Father never explained about it. Then, did Father get married without God's permission? If you think about this, the answer is easy. Father is a person who has lived his whole life with the motto of becoming the greatest filial son before God. There is no way such a Father would do what God does not want. If Father did something God did not want, it would be as if Father was walking the same path as the fallen Adam.

It is easy to understand if you know how Adam fell. Adam went the way God did not want. If Father went that way, Father too would have become like the fallen Adam. However, after Father got married, he went on a providential path according to God's Will. Therefore, Father's marriage to Ms. Choe Seongil was done in accordance with God's Will. We should all properly understand that it was not something he did because he personally desired to do it.

Father said that when he does important work, he always discusses it with God. When Adam heard from the archangel the seductive words that he would not die even if he ate the fruit of the tree of knowledge, Father said that Adam should have reported this to God and discussed it. Therefore, Father is someone who does not act unless God instructs him. He acted because such a revelation descended directly from heaven.

Father is a person born without original sin. We were born from fallen ancestors, but Jesus and Father were not born from fallen ancestors. So, Father was not born as a descendant of a fallen ancestral lineage. Father was born as a new ancestor, having the new lineage with God as his direct ancestor. Therefore, Father has no original sin, no evil mind, no hereditary sin, and no fallen nature. However, Father's other siblings were born with original sin. The reason for this is because, at that time, the moment that God's vertical love was completely united was that one moment that God conceived Father.

The same is true for Jesus. Because Jesus and Father had no original sin, no selfishness, no hereditary sin, and no fallen nature, even though they were born in a fallen world, they were able to overcome all the evil circumstances of the fallen world and could complete their individuality on their own. In this way, both Jesus and Father became perfected human beings.

Then why did Father get married to Ms. Choe Seongil? Blessed families need to clearly understand the reason for this. The

unfallen, original human being is to be perfected by the age of twenty-one. This is the standard of the principle of creation. Just as a physical person becomes a completed physical person at the age of twenty-one, the spirit person is also completed at the same time.

Therefore, you need to know what the final stage of perfection is. It is a principle of God's providence to hold a holy wedding ceremony according to that standard when humans perfect themselves according to God's Will. That is the kind of course that we are to walk. In other words, the final stage for the perfection of a human being is marriage in which God is bound with us. In the past, Koreans had a deep-rooted belief that unmarried people were not recognized as being adults. This is derived precisely from the tradition of Heaven's Principle of Creation.

Father walked the final stage of marriage as a perfected human being. Then, Father began God's formula course after having welcomed the liberation of Korea as an original human being who had achieved the perfection and realization of love. Jesus was unable to fulfill this, but Father walked this formula course and thus, by receiving the Holy Marriage Blessing, Father was able to begin God's providence as a perfected human being both in name and in substance.

Father's wedding was a wedding centered on two families, the Moon and Choe families, and because it was held as the providence for Father's perfection, it can be said to be a family-level Holy Marriage Blessing Ceremony.

In *Cheon Seong Gyeong*, Book 7, ("Earthly Life and The Spirit World"), Chapter 3, Section 4 (p. 758), under the subheading

“Blessed families are the key to the gates of the kingdom of heaven,” Father said:

After marrying, the moment when a couple first experiences conjugal love is the moment of their perfection as a man and a woman... The place where a man and a woman make love is where they achieve perfection as a man and as a woman. The royal palace of love that can settle on earth as the center of heaven and earth begins from that point. (261-017, 1994.05.15)

Jesus could not walk the marriage course for the unity of conjugal love, but Father walked that formula course.

There is no record in the Bible of a prophecy for the Second Advent of the Messiah before the Advent of Jesus. In other words, there is no record in the Bible of a prophecy that God would send the Lord of the Second Advent to fulfill the mission in the event that Jesus failed. Why didn't God make such a prophecy?

If God had prophesied the Second Advent of Christ when he sent Jesus, that would have meant that there was a possibility for Jesus to fail. Then, Jesus would not have been able to fulfill his responsibility with confidence. Even the believers would have thought that there was a possibility that Jesus would fail because of the word of the Second Advent, and as a result, they would not have been able to have absolute faith in Jesus. That is why, when Jesus was first sent, there were no words regarding a “Second

Advent.”

When God conducts His providence, He does everything based on faith. Of course, He is aware that there is a possibility of failure because we are human, but when God entrusts a mission to someone, God does so with absolute faith in him. In this respect, when establishing the chosen people of Israel and the Jewish faith, God did it on the basis of the belief that they would fulfill their responsibilities. Even when God sent Jesus, God sent Jesus with faith that he would fulfill his responsibility, so there was no prophecy that assumed his failure. However, in the case of Jesus in which an emergency situation arose, there was no time to make another prophecy separately. Therefore, Jesus thought it was best that he himself directly make the prophecy about his Second Advent, and therefore Jesus himself made the prophecy for his return.

There was another reason for Father getting married. Within Father's providential course, there was a path that had to be taken at the risk of his life. For example, there was the second stage of Father's course that Father had to go through within the communist world. Thus, in the case that something happened to Father, God thought that the best way for him was to name an heir himself, and so he had a son on April 2, 1946, with Ms. Choe Seongil.

Father said he composed the name of his son “Seongjin” based on the characters 聖 (Seong - Holy) and 進 (Jin - Progress) with the meaning that his son should carry on the God's will and move forward as Father's successor. Father talked about this just

once. There are words recorded in the Bible about the coming of the Lord of the Second Advent, but it does not have any records of what to do with the successor if something were to happen to the Lord of the Second Advent. God had Father marry and made Father prepare in advance for the son who would become Father's successor.

Then, why could Jesus not walk the marriage course? The people who performed the parental role and who gave birth to Jesus' physical body were Zechariah and Mary. They were not an officially married couple. If that had been exposed, the two people could not have survived. Mary and Joseph were also not a normal couple. In that family, Mary had no choice but to lead a guilty life with a secret that could not be revealed, and Zechariah's family was also in the same situation.

Between Zechariah and Elizabeth, Elizabeth and Mary, and Mary and Joseph, there was a serious problem. If the problem between them had been revealed, they would have been in a position where none of them would have been safe. The problem came into being because of Jesus. We easily say that "It was because Mary could not fulfill her responsibility" or "it was because Zechariah could not fulfill his responsibility," but it was because their circumstances were so difficult that Jesus could not get married. The two families of Zechariah and Elizabeth, and Joseph and Mary should have truly become one and should have pushed for the marriage of Jesus, but they could not do that. Had the circumstances been different, Jesus would have surely married.

However, in the end, Jesus walked the way of the providence without being able to get married, and died.

On May 27, 1946, Father received a revelation from God saying, “Go north” and Father left for the North without even contacting his home. In the Bible, there are parables about how people have been punished for not following Heaven’s Word. For example, Lot’s wife was told not to look back, but she looked back and became a pillar of salt.

At that time, Father had no rice or money at home, so he was on his way from Seoul to the North to get the rice he had purchased in Baekcheon, a rice-producing area north of the 38th parallel. At home, he had a wife and a son who was only fifty-five days old, and they were in a situation where they had nothing to eat but a bowl of rice that they had borrowed from their neighbor, with the promise to return it the next day. However, on the way to Baekcheon, Father received a revelation from God to cross the 38th parallel and go north. Even though Father wanted to contact his wife, Father had no other choice but to continue to go to the North.

Father arrived in Pyeongyang on June 6, 1946. He went to the house of a man named Na Choeseop in Pyeongyang-dong, rented a room, and from there started the providence in North Korea. Mr. Na Choeseop was a person Father knew at the Israel Monastery. Father did not just start walking around Pyeongyang to witness, but instead, began offering devotion (*jeongseong*) through prayer in his room. Father offered devotional prayers to mobilize

the spirit world. In Pyongyang, there were many people with deep faith. At that time, Pyongyang was known as the “Jerusalem of Korea.” In the midst of praying with devotion, people began visiting after receiving revelations from heaven.

In June 1946, Ms. Kim Inju (金仁珠, 1917–2010) visited Father. Her relative, Ms. Kim Jonghwa (金宗嬋) said, “Since a great teacher came from Seoul, let us go visit him and receive grace,” and they went. Father preached centered on the fact that Jesus should not have died on the cross, but only died hanging on the cross due to the Jewish people’s disbelief.

That night, Ms. Kim Inju had a dream of entering a cave. A young man stood in front of the cave and told her not to retreat but to go straight in. The cave was so dark and frightening that her feet stopped, and when she was going to turn and go back, she remembered the young man’s words and continued walking until she got out of the cave. Going further, there was a beautiful flower garden that seemed otherworldly, and there stood Jesus, whom she wanted to meet even in her dreams. She testified that Jesus took her hand and showed her around the flower garden. Since she met Jesus the day after she met Father, the joy she felt was beyond words.

That morning, after her husband left for work, she went to where Father was staying. Father immediately asked Ms. Kim Inju if she had had a dream the previous night, but what was more surprising was that Father already knew all the content of the dream. Because of such a spiritual experience, Ms. Kim Inju continued to attend the church in order to listen to the Word from

Father.

One day, Father said that the Lord of the Second Advent was coming to Korea. Ms. Kim Inju was very surprised because she thought that the Lord of the Second Advent would come to the Jewish nation. Father told her that if she prayed, she would even find out where the Lord of the Second Advent would come in Korea. Moved by the Word, Ms. Kim Inju prayed earnestly and as a result received the revelation that the Lord would come to Pyongyang. Ms. Kim Inju prayed in the room where Father offered devotional prayers, about where in Pyongyang the Lord would come. Suddenly, the door opened wide and Jesus spiritually entered the room. Jesus laid his hands on her head and prayed, "This daughter's path is going to be a harsh one full of tribulations and suffering, but please allow her to be able to continue until the end!" After the prayer was over, she said "Amen" and opened her eyes to see that Jesus now had the appearance of Father.

Ms. Kim Inju sought the truth earnestly, but it became a big problem in her home.

Her father-in-law was an elder of Jangdaehyeon Church (章臺峴), and to prevent her from going to Father's church, he asked the pastor and elders to visit their house every week. They used to only visit twice a year, but they started to visit more frequently because Ms. Kim Inju started going to Father's church. Despite the persuasions of her father-in-law who lived together with her and the pastor, she continued to attend Father's church. She wanted to listen to Father's Word so much that when her husband left, she would immediately leave the house. As a result, household chores

were neglected. Her husband thought that she was having an affair with Father. Despite being beaten and stripped by her father-in-law and husband, she continued to attend the church without giving up.

Sometimes she was unable to leave the house because she was held back by her family. However, every time this happened, Father would send a letter to her through a child, saying, “Overcome all the crosses. Heaven gives us trials to give us greater love and blessing. How heartbroken Heaven must be seeing Ms. Kim Inju suffering like this?”

In July, the month after Ms. Kim Inju first met Father, her nephew, Mr. Kim Wonpil (金元弼, 1928-2010) was witnessed to. Mr. Kim Wonpil was also one of the refugees who fled together with Father from Pyongyang to Busan. In the overcrowded city of Busan filled with refugees, he slept together with Father under a single blanket in a small room that was only about 1 or 1.5 pyeong (1 pyeong = 3.31 square meters). There is no one who has seen this part of Father’s early life from beginning to end other than Mr. Kim Wonpil. He truly saw Father as his own father, and whatever words Father spoke, he was someone who could believe everything. Upon being accepted, Father treated Mr. Kim Wonpil in the same way as he would have treated a precious guest and gave him these words, “You have many thoughts, but please always seek the center and live.”

At one point in the early days of the church, Father spoke for more than two weeks on the Epistle to the Romans from the New Testament. At that time, the church was only a small room about three meters wide and three meters long, but every time

people filled it to capacity and listened to the Word. Mr. Kim Wonpil testified:

At the time, Master was 27 years old. Master spoke energetically, and the people listening felt a shock like being struck by lightning. After the sermon, Master's clothes were wet as if they had been washed. When he squeezed them, water dripped out. Master actually took off his shirt and wrung the sweat-soaked shirt. Even in winter, Father made his cotton clothes completely soaked with sweat to the point he could wring them out. The worship service started with Father's prayer. His prayer was so very passionate, and when he began to speak, the congregation was engulfed in spiritual fire, and they received spiritual inspiration. It was as if lightning had struck, and in fact, some people felt as if hot heat was entering their bodies from outside. When people repented, their sorrow turned into joy, and there were people who even began to dance. That spiritual fire was so pleasant, and it would instantly liberate them from worry and anxieties. Not only were they comforted and their suffering disappeared, but even physical illnesses were cured.

Mr. Kim Wonpil was born in Pyeongyang in 1928 as the second son of eight siblings. Since it was the era of Japanese rule,

he had no choice but to speak only Japanese. However, he wanted to learn Korean, so he started attending Jangdaehyeon Church where he could use Korean. Although he attended the church, he didn't understand God so much, so he studied the Bible and went to the mountains to pray. In July, after graduating from Pyeongyang Normal School in March 1946, he went to his aunt, Ms. Kim Inju, for counseling about career issues. She told him that, "there is a young man from the south, and that place is a place where worship service is held in spirit and truth, so why not go there?" Following her suggestion, he started attending Father's church from July 17, 1946.

One day, Mr. Kim Wonpil saw the Bible Father used. All the pages were marked in red, and there was writing in small print between the letters. Many Christian believers came to visit Father, and many pastors also brought their believers to visit. By discussing the Bible, the pastors intended to show their believers who was right. However, even before the pastors could ask their questions, Father answered them as if he already knew what they were going to ask. The believers and pastors were astonished when they heard Father's answers and in many instances, they were speechless. Father not only knew what the pastor was going to ask but also about things that only the pastors themselves knew. Because of these things, there were pastors who left with gratitude.

Father listened eagerly to what others had to say. Elderly spiritualists sometimes forget what they once said, and they say the same thing over and over again. Even in such instances, Father would listen to them until the end without interrupting. He was

saddened with the thought of the believers going home and wanted to be with them forever. This attitude of Father's never changed throughout his life.

In the early days of the church, there were many believers who wanted to attend the church but were unable to due to persecution in their homes. Father would then go to the vicinity of the person's house and even waited in the winter cold until that person appeared on the balcony. In this way, Father showed more love and affection to these members than even to his own family.

People who met Father after receiving revelations, came to know that Father was the Messiah. While witnessing to people, Father held gatherings where they could watch a worship service on the spot. Most people who attended Father's gatherings were devout members of established churches, and as a result their churches were neglected. Because such believers stopped attending church, their pastors began to investigate why those who used to work so diligently had stopped. They came to know that a strange young man from the South had come and that they were participating in this young man's gatherings.

The pastors and the elders visited Father's gathering to take back their members. At first, they gently told him, "Stop doing these things and return our members." However, Father could not tell them to return to their original churches. Even if Father did talk to them, they would simply not listen and go back. Since Father's gatherings continued, the pastors resorted to violence, attacking Father and even kidnapping the members.

The situation escalated as Father continued to have his

gatherings. Attempting to protect their followers, the pastors finally reported Father to the communist authorities, and he was taken away to the Daedong Security Station. Father went to the security station with one hope. This is because Father knew that the leader of a spiritual group he wanted to meet was there.

Holy Lord Church–Inside Abdomen Church and Heo Hobin’s Disbelief

An incident took place about two months prior to Father arriving in Pyongyang. That was the case of the arrest of the leader of the Inside Abdomen Church (Bokjung Gyohoe). Father was arrested not long after this occurred.

Father did not have a national identity card (a citizenship card after September 1946), which every North Korean adult was required to have. Therefore, he was accused of being a spy sent from the South by the Syngman Rhee regime. On top of that, Father was accused and arrested for receiving donations from many people in Pyongyang, and then making fine clothes, and buying a nice house with the money. All of this happened because Father’s church was similar to the Inside Abdomen Church whose leader was accused and arrested just prior to this.

The Inside Abdomen Church was a religious organization that was created centered on the members of the Holy Lord Church. The headquarters of the Holy Lord Church was located in Cheolsan, North Pyeongan Province, and the head of the Holy Lord

Church was Grandmother Kim Seongdo (金聖道). Kim Seongdo suffered a mental disorder after giving birth and became a Christian after being healed of her illness through prayer and the laying on of hands by Christians. She devoted herself to a life of faith despite her husband's opposition, and even cured her own son's illness through prayer.

She was later shocked to find that the pastor of the church she attended was arrested for sexual immorality. She began a special fasting and prayer condition. She asked God for an answer about the reason why the pastor was unable to liquidate his sins and what the root of the sin was. It is said that at noon on the 2nd day of the 4th lunar month in 1923, the gates of heaven were opened and Jesus and an angel met. It is then that she received an answer to the question which she had sought by prayer and fasting at the risk of her life.

The answer to her prayer contained the following three things:

- ① The root of sin is sexual immorality.
- ② The crucifixion of Jesus was due to the disbelief of the Israelites.
- ③ The Lord was born in Joseon (Korea) as a baby with a physical body.

God emphasized that she had a mission to deliver this message to all people. Therefore, she put all her heart and soul into evangelism. Upon reporting this revelation to her pastor, she was told the answer to her prayer came from Satan. The

Presbyterian Church deemed her a heretic and expelled her from the church. She eventually came to worship at her own house and many people began to gather there. This was the beginning of the Holy Lord Church.

In 1940, in *North Korean Church History* (Institute of the History of Christian History in Korea), the Holy Lord Church was recorded as having 13 chapels and 94 churches. During this time, a Japanese high-level police detective disguised as a believer entered the church, stayed overnight, and investigated the contents of the teachings of the Holy Lord Church. As a result, Kim Seongdo was arrested in October 1943 and imprisoned for more than 100 days. Shortly after her release, Kim Seongdo died on the 1st day of the 4th lunar month, 1944, at the age of sixty-two.

After Kim Seongdo's death, believers gathered centered on Heo Hobin (許浩彬), a female leader who was Kim Seongdo's disciple who used to be in charge of the Pyeongyang Holy Lord Church. Heo Hobin's worship service focused on revelations she received when her abdomen moved, what she would speak about after these revelations, and also her stories about Jesus. Because of the claim that the Lord of the Second Advent would be born from a womb, it came to be called the Inside Abdomen Church (Bokjung Gyohoe 腹中教會). Heo Hobin was arrested before Japan surrendered.

When she was being tortured horribly, she was asked the question, "Is the God you believe in higher than His Majesty the Emperor?" When she said, "Even the Emperor is under God," they said, "That's execution by firing squad for her," and she was

imprisoned in solitary confinement. She thought that she would be shot after a week, but God told her, "You will not die." She also heard a voice saying, "You will be liberated on August 15." In accordance with these words, the liberation of Korea happened on August 15, and Ms. Heo was released.

Some 300 church members gathered under Ms. Heo and while overcoming difficulties through a devoted life of faith. At the Inside Abdomen Church, there was much more worship by bowing than by prayer. They bowed hundreds of times a day, 2,000 times, 4,000 times, and sometimes 7,000 times a day. Additionally, to relieve the bitter feelings (*han*) of Jesus, who had died on the cross 2,000 years ago, and to welcome the Lord of the Second Advent, they made new clothes with their sincerest devotion for Jesus and the Lord of the Second Advent. The amount of clothes made was very large, and Ms. Heo even pulled out her own hair one by one and wove traditional Korean socks (*beoseon*) from her hair for the Lord of the Second Advent.

On August 11, 1946, Father was arrested. At first, he was taken to Yudong Security Station and then moved to Daedong Security Station. At the Daedong Security Station, the leaders of the Inside Abdomen Church were detained before Father. In North Korea, police stations were renamed security stations in November 1945 and later named the Ministry of Internal Affairs in February 1947. When the Inside Abdomen Church leaders were arrested, security station workers loaded all the clothes made with sincerity by Inside Abdomen Church members for Jesus and the Lord of the Second Advent into a truck and took them away. The reason for

this, it was said, was that they deceived people and that the clothes were the product of exploitation.

The detained leaders of the Inside Abdomen Church believed in the revelation that Ms. Heo Hobin had received, “You will welcome the Lord of the Second Advent in prison.” They were prepared to welcome the Lord of the Second Advent in front of the gate of the security station with twenty to thirty people dressed in white robes as soon as they were notified from Heo Hobin of the date when the Lord of Second Advent would be released from the security station. Meanwhile, Father met Hwang Wonsin (黃元信), a leader of the Inside Abdomen Church inside the Daedong Security Station, and learned about the Inside Womb Church from him for the first time. Through Mr. Hwang, Father told Church Leader (Gyoju) Heo Hobin, “Deny the content of the revelation you received and get out.” However, Church Leader Heo did not accept those words. So, through Heo Hobin’s husband, Lee Ildeok (李一德), who entered his cell, Father tried again to convey the same words to Church Leader Heo, but failed. Finally, through the person bringing the meals in the prison, he passed the message to Church Leader Heo, “Deny everything and get out. Pray about who I am.” He wrote a memo on a slip of paper and had it delivered to Church Leader Heo.

This was a very dangerous thing to do. If by any chance this had been discovered, something terrible could have happened. Father could have been tortured and even killed. Nevertheless, because Father’s purpose was to become one with them, he saw a 50 percent possibility and decided to take a risk and send that slip

of paper. The slip of paper, fortunately, had been delivered to Church Leader Heo. If Church Heo believed in Father as the Messiah, the message he sent would be recognized as the message of the Messiah, and so, she would conceal it as something of great value, but if she thought that he was not anything at all, on that account, the slip of paper would also be worthless and would be handled carelessly and thrown away. So, if she believed in Father as the Messiah, the slip of paper would not be discovered, and Father would be safe. If she did not believe in him, the slip of paper would be discovered and a great danger would come to pass. Father took this kind of risk.

When Heo Hobin was at the Holy Lord Church, she knew that the Lord of the Second Advent would come to Korea with a physical body. However, she never directly met the Lord of the Second Advent. So, Heo Hobin prayed ardently to God, asking about the identity of the person who had sent the slip of paper. However, at this important time, neither God nor Satan could intervene. Because of Satan, God cannot teach. This was a matter where Church Leader Heo herself had to judge by her own wisdom and fulfil her own portion of responsibility. No matter how much she prayed, however, Heo Hobin could not receive an answer from heaven. Regarding the instruction to deny everything, she felt that doing so would not be fulfilling her duty to the Lord within her womb, since up until now she had believed in and received help from the Lord, which had allowed her to be able to manage the church. She felt that denying all of this without being able to even confirm the identity of the sender would be an act of betrayal.

Therefore, she decided to not accept the slip of paper and threw it away. As a result of that, the slip of paper was discovered in the prison cell by a prison guard. That is the event that happened at around 2:00 p.m. on September 18, 1946. Because of this, Father was severely tortured on the charge of disobeying the rules of the prison. On November 21, 1946, he was thrown out of the security station in a near-death state.

After enduring various forms of torture for two months and being detained for 103 days, Father was released in a near-death state. Father resembled a corpse. Even though Father was in such a miserable state, with the divine protection of God and the care of his followers, Father was able to make a miraculous recovery. Of course, the greatest source for this recovery was Father's own resilient spiritual energy.

For Father, this matter was not a simple failure. As a result of the disbelief of Heo Hobin who was representing Christianity, the providence of becoming one with Christianity failed.

Later, when Father went to America, the "New York Madison Square Garden Rally" held in 1974, and the "300,000 Washington Monument Rally" held in Washington, DC to commemorate the 200th anniversary of the founding of the United States in 1976, were held on September 18. With the world as the stage, Father decided to have these rallies on that same day to restore through indemnity the failure of the providence to unite with Christianity at Daedong Security Station.

The behavior of Church Leader Heo, seen here, is something we often experience around us. Even while the pastors

of the established churches say that our principles are correct, they do not come. Why do they not come? They think about the Jesus they have believed in until now. Even if our church is right, they think about whether it is okay to abandon the Jesus they have believed in. If they do that, they feel that they would be betraying the faith they have had in the Lord they have believed in so far. On top of that, they do not have enough conviction that Father is truly the Messiah. Therefore, they think that it is dangerous to come to our church and choose a safe route by staying in the established churches they have always been in. The attitude of the established church pastors who are skeptical of our church can be considered the same as the attitude of Heo Hobin.

After Father had been released from Daedong Security Station, fortunately, he was found by followers who took care of him and provided medical treatment. Father was able to recover his health a few months later. However, Heo Hobin and her disciples could not get out of prison after that, and they were all sentenced to death, which they suffered cruelly. If they had believed in Father as the Messiah and had done as he had said, then not just Father, but they too would have been safely released. Together they would have created a religious movement and started a new providence. Had this happened, Father would have stood in the victorious position of becoming one with the Christianity and would have made a new start in the providence of restoration, but this failed. So the providence for Father to become one with the Israel Monastery in South Korea had failed, and the providence made by going to North Korea had also failed.

2) Disbelief of the John the Baptist Groups and the Suffering of the Lord of the Second Advent

(Forty-day fast, Three Great Temptations, Restoration of the Three Great Blessings)

On December 8, 1946, after Father came out of the Daedong Security Station, Grandmother Ok Sehyeon came to our church with the guidance of an acquaintance. At this time, Father moved the meeting hall from the house of Mr. Na Choeseop (羅最燮) to the families of Mr. Na's friends, Mr. Jeong Myeongseon (鄭明善) and Mr. Kim Jonghwa (金宗燁). Grandmother Ok was attending the same Jangdaehyeon Church as Ms. Kim Inju. However, because there were so many church members, there had been no personal exchange between the two. However, before liberation, when the pastor of that church said that the congregation of Jangdaehyeon Church should also go to Shinto shrine worship, there was a woman who had raised her hand and said no to that. The person who objected was Grandmother Ok Sehyeon. When Ms. Kim Inju saw this, she thought Grandmother Ok was a great person.

Before visiting Father, Grandmother Ok received the Word to go to the mountain and pray, together with the revelation that, "The teacher from the south is in the Mansudae area, so go and find him. The teacher is now in hiding so that no one would know him." Grandmother Ok was a deaconess at Jangdaehyeon Church, and her husband was an elder of that church.

When Grandmother Ok Sehyeon met Father, his hair was shaved, he was wearing a blue coat, and his health had just recovered to the point where he was still barely able to sit up. Meeting Father, Grandmother Ok felt that Father was someone who had received special grace. After hearing a little from Father, Father said, "Let's work together for God's Will," and since then, they have walked this path together without change.

Although Father was very young, there was dignity in the way he spoke, and many spiritual works occurred at the time of worship. Because everyone received the fullness of grace, even after the service was over, they did not want to go home even if it was late at night. One day, about three weeks after Grandmother Ok started attending the church, Father decided to begin a five-day fast together with three women. Although Grandmother Ok felt that Father was a special person, she had not yet offered any special prayer about him. Father gave her a handkerchief he had used and said, "Pray with this." When Grandmother Ok laid out the handkerchief and prayed, she heard a voice from Heaven saying, "Your teacher is the young shepherd Christ."

Grandmother Ok's grandmother was also a devout Christian. She used to talk to her granddaughter Ms. Ok about the Second Coming of Jesus. "The Lord of the Second Advent comes in various appearances. He may even come in the form of a beggar, so no matter how beggars may appear, you must treat them with sincerity." In this way, she would always advise her granddaughter Ms. Ok to not judge people based on their appearance.

There was also something that happened when Father celebrated his 28th birthday (1947). Five or six members of the congregation gathered together and commemorated Father's birthday all night long. While Grandmother Ok was praying, three shepherds came and bowed to Father, and she saw three stars fall in front of Father. At the sight of that, she realized what kind of person Father was. From the perspective of Grandmother Ok's husband, who used to be an elder in the same church, it was a shameful affair, both socially and at the church, for his wife to attend another church that was considered heretical. So, he used violence in order to make prevent his wife from going to church. Ms. Ok even had her hair pulled out and her teeth broken. Still, she attended Father's church.

After being thrown out of Daedong Security Station, Father was able to regain his health thanks to the careful nursing by his followers for several months and once again began to walk the path of the providence to restore through indemnity the failure of unity with Christianity. The failure of the unity between Father and Christianity was the same as the failure of the unity of Jesus and Judaism and the Jewish people 2000 years ago. After the failure of this unity, Jesus fasted for 40 days and was taken by Satan to face the Three Great Temptations.

The Suffering of the Lord of the Second Advent, the Three Great Trials, and the Restoration of the Three Great Blessings

After Father could not become one with Heo Hobin, Father was

tortured to the point of death at the Daedong Security Station. But after Father recovered his health, while Satan watched, Father walked the course of three great tests in order to restore the three great blessings.

Why did things develop in this way? God's way of thinking and Satan's way of thinking about the failure that took place for Jesus and Father are completely different. Satan says that Jesus failed because he did not have the qualifications of a Messiah, while God sees the failure of Jesus as a result of the disbelief of Judaism and the Jewish people in Jesus. In order to prevent Satan from directly invading his flesh, Jesus did a forty-day fast to separate from Satan, and after that, in order to restore the three great blessings, he went on the course of receiving the three great temptations from Satan. After gaining victory over these temptations, he began his public life course of evangelism, and Satan withdrew for a while. The fact that Satan withdrew for a while means that Satan was waiting for an opportunity to attack Jesus again through Judaism and the Jewish people.

Father's case was the same as in Jesus' time. While God saw that Father and Christianity could not become one because of the Christians' disbelief, Satan was saying that Father had failed because he did not have the qualifications of a Messiah. Therefore, similar to Jesus, instead of fasting for 40 days, Father received severe torture at the security station. In a near-death state, Father's substance (body) was liberated from Satan and released. After that, in the same way as Jesus, Father went through three great trails in

order to restore the three great blessings. However, there are some differences between Jesus and Father. As the New Testament Age of Jesus was the age of the providence of restoration in image, Jesus went on the road to victory over the three great temptations with the Word. The Completed Testament Age of Father was the age of the substantial providence of restoration, so Father was able to restore the Three Great Blessings with his physical body by facing Three Great Tests.

Father's test course for the restoration of the First Blessing was to go to the house of Grandmother Park Eulyong, who called herself the wife of God and walk the path of serving this grandmother, her son, daughter, and daughter-in-law. Father walked the course to restore the eight vertical stages, starting from the lowest position as a fallen human being in the position of a servant of servant, servant, adopted son, son by a concubine, child by direct lineage, mother, and father, and finally to the position of the substantial object partner of God. So, in the beginning, because Father was in the position of a servant of servant, he could not sleep in the house. While sleeping in the barn outside of the house, Father started from the position where he had to do the most undesirable work.

When I was working for the Korea Electric Power Company, a young man from Pyeongyang came to me knowing that I was attending the Unification Church. In order to make me leave, he told me of what he had seen and heard in Pyeongyang. In the early days of the Ewha Womans University incident, in which our church students were expelled from that school, this young man

was the younger brother of Ms. Kim Gyeongsik, one of the students who was expelled. It just so happened that his house was in the same neighborhood as grandmother Park's house, and so he said that he knew very well about how Father was working in that house like a servant. According to him, he said that Father was a young twenty-eight-year-old man at the time and was healthy both in mind and body. People all over the neighborhood said, "If he doesn't have food, he should do physical labor instead. Why is a healthy young man doing such lowly work like washing clothes? Is he sane? Is he crazy?" Despite all of this, Father pretended not to hear what they were saying and silently devoted himself with all his heart (*jeongseong*).

In this way, when Father passed the seventh stage, Grandmother Park received a revelation from the spirit world and testified that "You are the person who will be the substantial object partner of God." After receiving this testimony, Father said to the Grandmother, "Now that you have given such a testimony, from now on, you must serve me." However, since she was told by the spirit world to simply give the testimony and was not told what she needed to do, she did not listen to Father's Word and continued to treat Father in the same way. Seeing this, Father left Grandmother Park's house taking along with him all the blessings that she had stored up in Heaven. In this manner, Father was able to fulfill the condition of restoring the position as God's substantial object partner, which is the fulfillment of the restoration of the First Blessing. With this, Father became a person who achieved the perfection of the restoration of the First Blessing.

The substantial providence for the restoration of the Second Blessing and the Third Blessing was accomplished by Father going to the spirit world for a period of forty-three days. The restoration of the Second and Third Blessing was accomplished based on Father's victory in the battle of truth with the representatives of the major religions such as Buddha of Buddhism, Confucius of Confucianism, Muhammad of Islam, and Jesus of Christianity. Father argued that the most important things in God's providence are first, the restoration of lineage, second, the restoration of heart, and third, the restoration of ownership.

No matter what religious doctrine you look at, there is no religion that asserts the restoration of lineage, restoration of heart, and restoration of ownership. These are concepts that do not exist within Christianity, Buddhism, Confucianism, Islam, or any other religion. What this means is that even the founders of these major religions did not know about this content. Jesus would have known about this content, but when he was on earth, he could not say anything important about it due to the disbelief of the Jewish people. So, Christians also do not know about it.

That is why all the religious leaders of the spiritual world opposed Father saying, "Where can you find such words?" and it is said that even Jesus and God stood on the opposing side to Father and opposed Father's claim. While Jesus knew it, he objected, because it was a test concerning Father and God, who opposed him in order to restore through indemnity Adam's disbelief in God in the past. But, because, despite all the objections, Father never changed his argument, later on, God handed down the verdict,

“Master Moon is right.” The restoration of children is done through the truth. That is why it is said that the victory concerning the truth is the victory of the restoration of the second blessing. In this way, therefore, Father became the victor of the restoration of the second blessing.

In terms of the Third Blessing, which is about the restoration of dominion over all things, Father was acknowledged to have the qualification to have dominion over all things because Father’s assertion about the restoration of ownership was acknowledged by God. Additionally, this recognition was further confirmed by the Word that Father received the seal of God. The Word that states that Father received God’s seal means that he received God’s seal stamp, which meant that Father now came in the position of God’s representative. In other words, as God’s representative, Father returned with the authority to have dominion over all things, which meant that Father now had the qualification for the restoration of the Third Blessing. In this way, Father also completed the conditions for the restoration of the third blessing.

Since Father secured the qualifications for the restoration of the first, second, and third blessings as described above, he also secured the qualifications of the Messiah. This is because the Messiah is the one who comes to fulfill God’s three great blessings. So, Father was able to once again begin his course as the Messiah. The Holy Song we sing on the first page of the Holy Song Book is the Holy Song written by Father, and you need to know that these lyrics were composed right after the victory in the restoration of the three great blessings mentioned here. For the first time with

this victory, Father was able to compose the lyrics for “The Victor’s New Song” (Song of the Victors). It is estimated that it was written around July-August of 1947. This is because if Father was released from the Daedong Security Station on November 21, 1946, and underwent treatment for a period of four to five months, then it would be reasonable to assume that he could freely engage in activities again around May-June of 1947. After that, there was a course at Grandmother Park Eulyong’s household and a course of forty-three days in the spirit world.

■ Grandmother Ji Seungdo (池承道: 1895-1988)

Grandmother Ji Seungdo who acted as an important spiritual medium concerning church events, visited Father’s church in November 1947. She was not brought to the church by a physical person. The spirit world led her all the way to the church; therefore, she came alone. She was practicing faith because of a revelation that she had received five years earlier, “In five years, the Lord will come.” From that time on, she would visit each house proclaiming that the Messiah would come, but the people only looked at her with doubting eyes. One Sunday, five years after the revelation, she felt like she was going to meet the Messiah, so she left the house with a Bible and a hymn book. Her feet were pulled to some place as if attracted by a magnet. Without anyone telling her where to go, the place she was led to was the front of Father’s church door in Gyeongchang Village in Pyeongyang. This makes you really feel how Heaven truly guides those who pray.

Father, whom Ji Seungdo had seen and met for the first time, had a face that was shining, unlike normal people. At the time, Father was twenty-eight years old and Ms. Ji was fifty-three years old. She felt that Father was already aware of everything about her, and she felt that Father was a person ahead of her in every way. When she went to church for the second time, Father said, "Pray about what country the Lord is coming to." Ms. Ji offered an earnest prayer for one week. The answer from God was, "He comes to the poor country of Korea." When she heard this answer, she jumped for joy, and continued to shed tears of gratitude. In this way, Ms. Ji came to know who Father was through prayer.

3) Inheriting the Mission of Jesus

The two years and eight months in Heungnam Labor Camp for the total indemnity of Jesus' suffering course

If Jesus would have become one with Judaism and the Jewish people that God had prepared to receive the Messiah, he would have accomplished the Will of God's Providence as God intended. If Father would have become one with the Christian group that God prepared for the Second Coming of the Messiah, he would have fulfilled the Will of God's Providence as God had intended.

However, Jesus could not unite with Judaism, received opposition, and thus was taken by Satan and had to fast for forty days and receive the Three Great Trials, but was victorious. As a

result, Satan left for a while, and as the Messiah, Jesus evangelized and found twelve disciples and other believers. However, Satan invaded again through Judaism and the Jewish people, and Jesus was placed in a position to be tried by the Roman Governor Pontius Pilate. If the twelve disciples had become one with Jesus and protected Jesus, Jesus would not have been crucified. However, as all twelve disciples ran away, Jesus died hanging on the cross alone.

Father, too, suffered severe persecution because the established churches could not unite with Father. He was taken by the authorities of the Communist Party, who were the substantial Satan, and was tortured to a near-death state. After Father was freed and his health restored, he walked the formula course to substantially restore the three great blessings. Thus, by bringing victory in this course, Father went through a period of evangelism. However, the Christian pastors and elders sent 83 false accusations to the Ministry of Internal Affairs, and Father was imprisoned by the authorities of the Communist Party. This was the way of the cross for Father in order to begin his course as the Second Coming of the Messiah, having received the baton from Jesus, who was the first coming of the Messiah.

The position from which Jesus left the earth was on the cross. Jesus died on the cross, but the Messiah of the Second Advent should not die on the cross, but succeed by receiving the Messiah's baton. Jesus died on the cross because he lost the twelve disciples. In order to restore this through indemnity, Father had to find and establish disciples corresponding to Jesus' twelve apostles, while on the cross of suffering. Only then, could Father inherit

Jesus' mission and come down from the cross without dying.

■ Father's Re-imprisonment on February 22, 1948

In North Korea, all the companies operated by churches were forfeited, and as making a livelihood became difficult for believers because of the food distribution system, the churches faced a crisis in maintaining themselves. In this situation, Father's church had become another new threat to the established churches. Pastors and elders with social influence brought accusations against Father to the Ministry of Internal Affairs. The number of complaints came to eighty-three in all. The jealousy of the established denominations and the communist party's policy of annihilating religion were united. On February 22, 1948, Father was detained once again at the Pyeongyang Ministry of Internal Affairs.

On February 25th, three days after detention, he had his head shaved and was subjected to multiple tortures until he was transferred to Pyeongyang Prison. While vomiting blood, he collapsed at the scene of torture and lost consciousness, but he did not pray, "Please save me." Rather, he prayed, "Please do not worry about me." The reason was because he felt that God Himself was in an even more painful position than himself.

The Pyeongyang winter is very cold. The average temperature is minus 10 degrees Celsius, and when it is cold, it falls to minus 20 degrees Celsius. When you wake up in the morning, the old piece of quilt that you slept with during the night is frozen and hardened like a solid board, covered in white frost.

There, the rice that is served is frozen rice with soybeans, and when you eat it, your body cools down from the inside, and you start to shiver.

There was a trial held at the Pyeongyang Courthouse on April 7, 1948 in order to show people that believing in God is foolish. In the courtroom, many dignitaries from the communist authorities and young communists also attended. It was their strategy to make it a place to educate them. In that place, Father, whose head was shaved, was in the defendant's dock wearing handcuffs; and the trial started.

The presiding judge threw the first question at Father, "What did you major in?" When Father answered, "I majored in electrical engineering," the presiding judge asked, "How is electricity made?" The judge asked this because invisible electricity can be made as a thing, and the communists thought that the invisible God too was made by man. Father knew the judge's intention to take him to an inquisition through the electrical question, so Father explained the principle of electricity in detail. Because Father had studied electricity professionally in Seoul and Japan, the presiding judge was troubled at Father's open reply, and so he stopped him as he was talking. That is because, contrary to the judge's intention, Father's words were persuasive.

In the verdict concerning Father, it was written, "Tempting ignorant people with sweet words, creating falsehoods and extorting a lot of money and valuables, he destroyed society and Christian families." After reading the verdict, the judge asked Father again. "Is there nothing to correct about this verdict?" At times like this, there

are barely any people that say there are objections. That is because everyone knew that it was the best to remain silent. But Father confidently protested. "Please take away the word falsehood." However, Father's protest was not recognized. A five-year forced labor verdict was handed down for "the crime of disrupting social order." The trial at that time was a unilateral declaration following a Soviet-style trial procedure.

It is said that even the communists who watched the trial proceedings were moved by the dignified appearance of Father, who stated his dissenting opinion even under disadvantageous circumstances. What they had aimed at was to show the "helplessness of the man of God (Father);" The prison officers, therefore, regretted bringing in the young communists for education as Father had demonstrated the opposite of their intention.

The few followers who witnessed the trial were overwhelmed by Father's attitude toward the trial. Even while he was in a situation where anyone could be discouraged, Father kept such an unwavering and resolute attitude.

For his followers, Father had a warm image like that of a father gently holding a baby. But in the courtroom, through his words and deeds, Father was overflowing with courage, boldness, and fearlessness in the face of anything. Even at the moment when the verdict came down, for Father, there was neither wretchedness nor grimness, rather, it is said that his face looked as though it was shining with hope. In fact, Father went straight from the courtroom to Pyeongyang Prison with the hope that he could meet a person whom God had prepared.

Father met a righteous man in Pyeongyang Prison. That person was called Kim Wondeok, who had received a death sentence as the cell chief. One day, he had a strange dream. In the dream, an old man with gray hair appeared and told him that he would not be executed, and that he had to prepare to welcome a young man who would come from the South to Pyeongyang.

Shortly afterwards, just as he had been told in his dream, Mr. Kim Wondeok's death sentence was commuted to imprisonment for four years and eight months. Overjoyed because of escaping the death penalty, Mr. Kim forgot to prepare to welcome the young man from the south. One day, the old man appeared again in a dream and scolded him, "Did you forget what I said?" After that, Mr. Kim began suffering from pain. Mr. Kim's father grew ill and died in a car accident. This time, in the midst of a vision, his late father appeared and said, "The old man told you to prepare to welcome a young man from the south. I will show you the young man, so follow me." As his father showed him the way. Mr. Kim followed his father, and a palace-like place appeared. Mr. Kim climbed up three floors and offered a bow there, and looking up, there was a shining throne, and one young man was sitting there. His father told him, "Lift up your face and look at the person who is over there." And when he lifted his face, the brilliance was so strong that he couldn't see the person's countenance in detail. On the way back, after walking down the stairs, his father had disappeared. Mr. Kim learnt that the person sitting on the throne was Father and from then on, he accompanied and followed Father. Later, Mr. Kim and Father were transferred together to the

Heungnam Labor Camp.

On May 20, 1948, Father was transferred from Pyeongyang Prison to Bongung (本宮) Special Labor Camp in Heungnam. The place was called Bongung (“original palace”) because it was the birthplace of Yi Seonggye, the founder of the Joseon Dynasty. Father was transferred again from the Bongung Special Labor Camp to the Deok-ri (德理) Special Labor Camp on June 21. Father continued to serve prison time there until he was liberated from the camp on October 14, 1950.

There was a time when Father sometimes told stories about the Heungnam Special Labor Camp. The text below is an excerpt from what Father said in the United States between December 27 and 29, 1971 after arriving in the United States during the Third World Tour.

I don't think you know well what prison life is like under communist rule. After the Soviet Revolution, many Russians suffered many great hardships in the forced labor camps. The Communist Party's true intention, in their minds, was that they wanted to annihilate all those who opposed them, but they couldn't do it completely because of world opinion. So, the Communist Party placed them in forced labor camps, compelled them to do harsh labor, and waited for them to die. When I was in a North Korean prison, I was trapped in a forced labor camp. The North Korean regime, using the Soviet Union's

example, mobilized all prisoners for three years of hard labor so that they died.

Sunday is a day of rest, but the Communists did not let the prisoners rest. They made time for so-called brainwashing. They made propaganda and told lies that were obvious. They advertised that they treated the prisoners humanely, but everything was a lie. They said that visitors could visit at any time and that those who came could bring any food for them, but the fact was, it was not like that. It was said that fish, beef, and pork were fed to prisoners on national holidays, but in reality, not even one of these was provided. They continued like this throughout the year with propaganda that was different from reality.

Everyone, I think that you have seen a Jewish concentration camp in a movie. If you look there, the majority of people will see that the calf side of the lower leg is larger than the thigh above the knee. If you all did hard labor, the thighs of all of you will be thinner than the thighs of children. They look like corpses. If you do hard labor while eating a small amount of food, your energy will be consumed rather than supplemented. When you wake up in the morning, you come to realize that your abdomen has become like a big piece of board. That is life in a communist labor camp.

When receiving food rations, as soon as the

prisoners receive a bowl of rice, they unconsciously put all of the rice into their mouths. While eating your own food, your eyes go to a different person's rice bowl. Those that ate all their food before the serving ended, forgot what they ate, and see different people receiving rice, and know their own bowl is empty. So sometimes they fight with the person next to them saying, "You ate all of my food!" If a prisoner dies before having finished eating his meal, the prisoners around him would pull out the grains of rice from the mouth of the dead and fight each other in order to eat them.

How can you survive in such a situation? For humans, it is not a fact that people only have physical bodies. I came to know the importance of mental strength. So I convinced myself that I could live by eating only half of the rice I was receiving at that time. I started giving half of the rice I was receiving to other people. I continued like that for three weeks. Even while eating only half of the rice I received, I became confident that I could achieve my work quota. So I decided to voluntarily do the most backbreaking work. After three weeks, I got used to the tasks too and became full of confidence. From then on, I decided to eat all of my rice rations.

I thought of half as my earned portion and the remaining half as a bonus especially received from

God. By these thoughts, I could receive internal consolation. I came to know that that consolation becomes a great strength. I decided to work twice as hard as anyone else. So, when I was working, I thought I was always taking tests. I researched and analyzed what effects there are on the body when you work harder than usual.

If you think about food during work, you cannot focus. So I decided not to have thoughts about food while working. I thought it was my appointed destiny to always work like that. I thought I was born to do that kind of work. I thought I was making a movie to show to my descendants and people who would follow me in the future. I worked having the mind that people would become moved watching me work.

I spent a period of two years and eight months in prison that corresponded with the public life of Jesus and was able to witness to twelve disciples. I was able to take back all the conditions Jesus lost by witnessing to twelve disciples. Because I was able to accomplish everything I had to do, the United Nations forces, including the United States, attacked North Korea and liberated me.

Mr. Kim Wonpil, after meeting Father on July 17, 1946, worked as a schoolteacher and, later, worked for the Army

Ordnance Manufactory. When Father was doing forced labor in the Heungnam labor camp, suddenly, Mr. Kim had to go to Heungnam for a while to manage a warehouse for the company business. Mr. Kim went to Heungnam and waited for Father to pass by on the 4 km road that goes from the camp to the factory. At that time, the prisoners were walking while looking down and holding each other's hands.

That time was the time that factory employees also went to work. The prisoners went holding each other's hands in order to prevent them from escaping. The prison guards walked together, holding guns on both sides of the line that was formed. There was Father in the throng of those prisoners. Father sensed and quickly found Mr. Kim and sent a signal with his eyes so that he would come near him. Mr. Kim also wanted to go close to Father, but if he was found and something happened, not only himself, but Father also would not be able to pass by safely.

However, when Father came close to Mr. Kim Wonpil, he said, "Are you all doing well?" This was something scary that no normal person could ever do. However, for Father, he was so concerned about the welfare of the members he used to meet in Pyongyang that he was willing take such a risk. Fortunately, they were not discovered by the prison guard this time. While Father was taking such a dangerous risk, why was Father worried about the affairs of his followers in Pyongyang? Even in the midst of living a prison life when he might die at any moment, Father would pray for his followers three times a day. Even when you are living a normal life, it is difficult to pray for others three times a

day for more than two years. It is needless to say how difficult this must have been in the midst of starvation and forced labor.

To Father, his followers were more precious beings than his own life. That is why Father was able to continue praying for them. It was the same as parents gladly sacrificing themselves for their children.

The most heartbreaking moment during the time Father was receiving visits was Father's mother coming to visit. Going from Pyeongyang to Heungnam was already so difficult, but even more so from Jeongju. In order to travel, several kinds of travel documents were necessary. Nevertheless, thinking of her son, she prepared much food and clothing for the visit. But in front of his mother, Father gave the food to someone who was hungrier than he was and the clothes to those who wore older prison clothes than he did. At that moment, his mother told Father, "Eat the mixed grain flour when you are alone with no one around you." But Father said, "I dislike that. I cannot do that." Hearing her son say that, tears welled up as her lips trembled.

That is why the clothes he wore were always tattered and flapped in the wind. Every time Father's mother came to visit, she saw her son's appearance and cried out, "I brought those clothes for your sake. Is someone telling you to give them away? How can something like this be happening?" Hearing such words, Father spoke to his mother in tears saying, "I am not simply a son of the Moon family. Before that, I am a son of the country of Korea. And, before being a son of Korea, I am a son of the world and the son

of heaven and earth. That is why, I will listen to what you said only after I have loved all people. That is the Way I must follow as a man.”

Once after Father’s mother, Mrs. Kim Gyeonggye, went to the Heungnam labor camp and returned to her house in Jeongju, Father’s cousin, Mr. Moon Yonggi said the following incident happened:

When Father’s mother came home a few days later, I asked, ‘How was it?’ However, as soon as she entered the room, without saying anything, she started crying while hitting the floor with her fist. She was angry and upset that despite bringing various things with her for her son, he had given them all away to others.

Father knew his mother’s heart to the bones. Father was also aware of what his mother went through and how she felt coming all the way to Heungnam Prison. However, Father knew better than anyone else that for God and the salvation of mankind, Father had to stand in the position of the heavenly heart (天情) and not the humanistic heart (人情).

● The Unconditional Love for Father of His Mother and Elder Brother

When Father’s mother went to visit Father in Heungnam, despite

her saying that she would never go again, she had already started preparing for the next visit. Father was the son that his mother loved and expected the most of out of her thirteen children. After visiting Father several times, she sold everything that could be sold, and was left with only a cow. If she sold this cow, then she could no longer work as a farmer. However, in order to visit her son, there was no other way but to sell the cow to cover the expenses.

At that time, Father's mother visited and discussed with Ms. Kim Gyeonggi, her younger sister-in-law (Father's aunt, and the mother of three brothers, Mun Yongseon, Mun Yonggi and Mun Yonghyeon), who lived next door. She made the following request: "I want to visit my son even if it means we won't be able to farm anymore. But I can't tell my eldest son (Mun Yongsu) to sell the cow, so could you talk to him on my behalf." The eldest son was five years older than Father, had excellent spiritual senses and would do anything for his younger brother. That is why every time his mother would go to visit Father, not once try to prevent her from taking many things.

Father's aunt called Father's elder brother to her house and conveyed how his mother wanted to visit Father, even if it meant selling the cow. For the family, selling the cow was a life and death matter. Without saying a single word, the elder brother went back home late at night with tears welling up in his eyes. From the elder brother's position, he could not just keep this a secret from his wife. The elder brother and his wife were in different positions. Since she was the wife of the eldest brother, she was in a situation

where she would wake up early in the morning to prepare the meals for the big family, taking responsibility for everything in the family. However, the following morning when she heard that they were going to sell the cow, she did not wake up in the morning. Of course, she did not make the meals as well. After hearing that they were going to sell the cow, which was their final remaining asset, she must have been exceedingly troubled and hurt. Despite such circumstances, the elder brother decided to sell the cow. With that money, Father's mother prepared things like the mixed grain flour and items of clothing, and went to visit Father. Here, we can see Father's elder brother's filial piety toward his mother, and the depth of love that the elder brother and Father's mother had for Father.

The period from February 22, 1948 to October 14, 1950, a total of two years, seven months, and twenty-three days, was a crucial time that would decide whether the Second Advent of the Messiah could take on the mission that Jesus, the First Advent of the Messiah, was unable to accomplish. It was also an important period that decided the destiny of the successional progress of God's providence and Father's destiny as the Messiah. After the trial of April 7, 1948, there were no more cruel punishments involving torture, but for Father, each day was a continuous struggle that would decide victory or defeat in his battle with Satan.

During the period when Father was detained, Satan thoroughly monitored Father on whether Father was upholding both the laws of Satan and God's laws, and if there was even one law that Father did not follow, then Satan would immediately accuse

him for this in front of God and attack Father.

Because Father was imprisoned under the rule of Satan, Father knew he had to abide by Satan's law. At the same time, as the Son of God, Father had to thoroughly uphold God's law wherever he was, regardless of the fact that Father was living a life deprived of freedom in a prison under the rule of Satan. Living in an environment under Satan's rule where Father's freedom had been completely taken away was the most difficult condition for Father to uphold God's law.

As stated in Father's Words during the Third World Tour in the United States, Father considered forced labor in a labor camp as his destiny and decided to work more than twice as hard as others. As a result, Father was awarded the exemplary prisoner award three times, which was an award given only once a year. With that, Father established all conditions of upholding Satan's laws.

The foremost principle of life that Father held dear was to become the utmost filial child in the eyes of God. This belief was established as the foundation of every aspect of his life.

The first of God's laws is to live a life for the sake of others. Therefore, for the first three weeks after entering Heungnam labor camp, Father practiced a life of living for the sake of others by giving away half of his own meals to others. Even when working as a team of ten people in forced labor, Father took on the most difficult tasks, and by letting the easiest tasks among them be taken by the weakest people, he set the conditions for living for the sake of others. The reason why Father decided to work twice as much

as others is because Father thought that if he worked more than others, then that would lighten their workload. When Father's mother or someone visited and brought food or clothing, Father would not keep any for himself. When his mother came with things, Father would give them all away to people who were in greater need of them in front of his mother. In this way, Father practiced a life of living for the sake of others.

The second of God's laws is to completely serve and attend God the Father as God's son. Therefore, Father would immediately put into practice any instructions or commands given by God. For example, when Father was commanded to go to North Korea from South Korea, Father immediately took action without informing anyone. Father also set aside a dedicated prayer time every morning to report everything to Heavenly Father. No matter how exhausted Father was from forced labor or how difficult it was for Father from being ill, Father would wake up two hours before the wake-up time, use a small piece of cloth soaked in the precious drinking water that Father kept to clean his body, and made time to offer prayers of reporting to God and devotion.

The condition that Father had to fulfill without dying in prison was to establish at least the twelve disciples that Jesus lost. Even in the free world where ordinary believers can freely engage in religious activities, it is extremely difficult to witness to make a believer. Even more so in a prison where you cannot meet and speak as you please. Witnessing and making believers is a task that is close to impossible. So, how could Father have made more than twelve disciples in prison? Because Father knew it would not be

possible with the usual method, he used a special method. That is to move the hearts of the spirits in the spirit world. To do that, Father had to do things that would move the hearts of the people around him and all things. Whether that was while working or in his daily activities. By doing so, Father was able to move the hearts even of the ancestors in the spirit world. Because Father lived and worked like that, the ancestors of prisoners around Father would appear in their dreams, giving them revelations. The ancestors of the prisoners gave them revelations that Prisoner 596 in a certain building was a special person and that they should follow him. Because of this revelation, they secretly greeted Father in the prison and began to develop an emotional connection with Father.

On August 1, 1950, there was a major bombing by the U.S. Air Force on the Heungnam factory area where the Heungnam forced labor camp was located. When all the guards fled to a safe place to avoid the bombing, the prisoners attending Father naturally gathered around Father. That was when they received the Word from Father for the first time, and they learnt that as long as they stayed within the radius of twelve meters around Father they would be safe from the bombing. This fact further deepened their trust in Father.

I had always wondered why Father gave the food and clothing brought by his mother in her presence, rather than in her absence. I never directly asked Father about this, and Father never mentioned anything about this either. So, the conclusion I reached was that sharing them when it was much more challenging to do such a thing in front of her rather than doing it in her absence conveyed the true meaning of sharing. I realized that Father

established the standard of truly living for the sake of others in the most extreme circumstances in a forced labor camp as a person of God.

■ The Testimony of Mr. Kim Inho

Mr. Kim Inho, a person we did not know about, wrote a book called *The Road to Seoul* (Minjung, published in 1985) that is about half his lifetime. In this book, he described in detail his experiences of forced labor in Heungnam Special Labor Camp.

In the first chapter of the book, there is a section titled “The Imprisoned Saint, Reverend Sun Myung Moon,” where Mr. Kim described his experiences with Rev. Moon while in prison. It is worth noting that Mr. Kim is neither a Christian nor a member of the Unification Church. The following is an excerpt of the content Mr. Kim Inho wrote concerning Father in this book.

He (Master Moon) was an exemplary prisoner recognized even by the communist guards. The reason for this was that he never committed even a minor infraction, had a strong physique, and worked tirelessly without taking any breaks. When people around him would advise him to consider his own well-being, he would respond, ‘If I work as much as possible, my friends will have less hardship,’ and he never stopped working. Rev. Moon was a man of few words, but he

always had a calm expression, and no one could match his strength and passion when he worked. However, there was one thing that bothered me. Rev. Moon never took a bath. During the busy workdays, our eyes and nose would be covered in fertilizer powder, mixed with sweat and dust, making it sticky and uncomfortable. So, even if it meant using unclean industrial water, we would bathe with it. The next day, my curiosity about Mr. Sun Myung Moon was finally resolved.

One day, I felt the urge to urinate and woke up about two hours earlier than usual. It was still dark inside the prison, waiting for my eyes to adjust to the darkness, I sat quietly. In the dim light, I faintly saw Rev. Moon sitting in the corner of the room.

I wondered if he was praying. Rev. Moon opened his eyes and spoke. 'Are you Mr. Kim? You woke up early!'

I asked him, 'Do you wake up like this every day, before the sun rises? Aren't you tired?'

Rev. Moon responded, 'I'm fine. My body has gotten used to waking up early, and if I rest more than this, I actually feel less refreshed.'

After finishing my business and returning, I saw Rev. Sun Myung Moon taking off his clothes and wiping his body with a wet, cold cloth. 'Master Moon, aren't you cold? What if you catch a cold?'

He replied, 'Since I don't wash my body in the factory, if I don't wipe my body like this it is unbearable.'

In other words, he never washed his body with water like the factory's wastewater. Instead, he would carefully wet a cloth with drinking water and wipe his entire body clean before dawn every day. After waking up, he would finish his prayers, wipe his body, pray again, and then have his meal before going to work. His strong physical and mental strength in managing his own stamina in an environment close to death was remarkable.

Even managing one's physical condition in such an environment where death is your neighbor is not an easy task. Moreover, it was a mystery that he would sacrifice precious sleep time by reducing it by two hours every day to adhere to his religious rituals.

There was another mysterious thing. There was a rumor that had spread throughout the concentration camp, and everyone knew about it. According to the rumor, Rev. Sun Myung Moon possessed supernatural powers. When a guard would unjustly mistreat Rev. Moon, it was said that the next night, an old man resembling a mountain god would appear in the guard's dream and scold him. Even more peculiar was the fact that Rev. Sun Myung Moon himself knew about it in advance. He would talk about the dream in

great detail, as if he had witnessed it himself, and confirm it with the guard who had troubled him the day before.

I can confidently say this as someone who is neither a Christian nor a member of the Unification Church in the past and now. The consistent words, actions, and character demonstrated by Rev. Moon in the Heungnam Special Labor Camp were something I could never forget.

Another interesting story about Rev. Moon is that, at the time, food was extremely scarce in the concentration camp, therefore sharing the food you received as a gift was very difficult to do. However, Rev. Moon would give away his own portion of the meal to those who were hungry and in need.

At the time, there was a popular story circulating among the prisoners who were suffering from hunger and hard labor in the prison. It was said that a single bean received in the prison was equivalent to a whole pig outside.

Mr. Kim Inho speaks about his life in the concentration camp with Father. This was something that happened on November 11, when Mr. Kim Inho arrived at Heungnam labor camp from Pyeongyang prison. This was after Father had already arrived at Heungnam. And Mr. Kim was released from the concentration camp on October 14, 1950, the same day as Father. Even when there were changes in

the cells, Mr. Kim mysteriously ended up in the same cell as Father. They shared the same cell for about a year, eating and sleeping together.

On November 16, 1994, at a hotel in Seoul's Itaewon district, a Japanese journalist named Mr. Takeda Yoshiro interviewed Mr. Kim Inho. He first asked about Mr. Moon, whom Mr. Kim had seen in the detention camp.

When I (Kim Inho) was in the Heungnam labor camp, I was between twenty-three and twenty-five years old. Mr. Moon was an older and noble person. I was able to discuss problems in life, and I truly respected him from the bottom of my heart. Besides that, Mr. Moon was a person who slept very little. He must have slept only about three hours a night. As a man of few words, he did not say much, but he set an example for us by his actions.

According to Mr. Kim, the prison cells in the Heungnam camp were very small. About twenty-five people (sometimes thirty to forty people) were packed in the cell. Because the room was so small, you could not lie down. If you had to get up to go to the toilet in the middle of the night, it was quite difficult to secure a place to sleep. Mr. Kim drew a picture for the journalist of how they slept in the cell. The schedule for the day that I heard from Mr. Kim is as follows (depending on the person who was in the same camp, the time, etc. is slightly different).

[A Day's Schedule]

- At around 4:30 in the early morning, sirens sound and the guards run around shouting "Wake up!"
- Breakfast time lasted thirty minutes, but the amount we had to eat could be finished in two to three minutes.
- At around 5 a.m., we gathered in the yard and did a roll call.
- At around 6 a.m., we departed for the Heungnam Fertilizer Factory which was six kilometers away from the camp. To prevent breakouts, we had to line up in four rows, holding each other's hands, and walk while looking down. Except for Sunday, no matter how hard it rained or how much it snowed, we would have to make a round trip between the forced labor camp and the factory.
- At around 7:30 a.m., we arrived at the factory. Then we were given our work for the day.
- At around 8 a.m., work began.
- At noon there was a lunch break. But just like at breakfast, the amount of food was such that we finished eating it in two to three minutes. During the remainder of the lunch break, recreational events were held. This was not to please the prisoners, but for the guards to enjoy. They would have the prisoners sing a popular song. The singers were usually the same people. If you fell asleep during the entertainment, they would hit you on the head from behind. The prisoners were not allowed to chat with each other.
- We worked from around 1:00 p.m. to 6:00 p.m. (with a break time). After that, we returned to the forced labor camp. When we

returned, the prison guards checked us. They inspected us to see whether or not we came hiding things like glass shards, cigarette butts, strings, and matches from the workplace.

- Around 8 p.m. was dinner.
- From around 9 p.m., for about thirty minutes, there was a book reading meeting (讀報會) in which we read and discussed the editorials of the *Nodong sinmun*, the newspaper of the Workers' Party of North Korea. In addition, a review such as self-criticism, etc. about the day's work was written by a selected person once every week or ten days.
- Around 10 p.m. we went to bed.

Water was provided twice a day, in the morning and in the evening, but one could get as much as one cup from the place where the water was stored.

[Life in the Forced Labor Camp]

On Sunday, since there was no work, the "book reading session" was longer, about two hours, and one hour was permitted for sunbathing, laundry, etc. There were about two baths in a week. A letter could be written once every one or two months.

Visits were usually once a month, but there were times when it was not like that. The visiting time was about thirty minutes. Before the Korean War occurred, there was also no fixed place for the visitation, and one was able to visit relatively freely. After the war started, a special place was made for visits. At the time of the visit, without fail, a prison guard had to be present. If

the visit was not done as instructed, after that, one would not be able to visit. Among the things brought at visit time, many of them were rice flour (rice and barley roasted and made into a powder), clothes, and underwear.

Prison outfits that were first issued had to be worn continuously regardless of the season. Nothing such as underwear was issued. If your clothes wore out and there were holes, you had to sew them yourself. If you become malnourished, you would die in about a month. If you pressed on your skin and the indent did not return to normal, then death was only a matter of time. It wasn't worth it to put rice or porridge in the mouth of a dead man. The soup was bitter because it was boiled in seawater, and when you looked carefully at the bottom of the bowl, you would find small stones at there.

On September 9, 1948, the Democratic People's Republic of Korea was founded. On September 9, it was said that as a generosity by President Kim Il-sung, a whole cow would be given. After a long speech given by a general praising President Kim Il-sung, the long-awaited meal was served. However, despite the meal being called beef soup, not even a drop of beef fat was floating on the surface.

As this kind of life continued, a tense atmosphere prevailed among the prisoners. There were also spies within the cells who provided information to the guards. In such circumstances, nobody would talk anymore. Spies would readily accept their role in exchange for a little more food, as they received some privileges for providing information.

Among the people working at the Heungnam Fertilizer Factory, there were both prisoners and regular workers. The regular workers would start their work at 8 a.m. and finish at 6 p.m. There seemed to be no specific work quotas, as they would smoke cigarettes and chat freely in between tasks. Seeing them eat the lunch boxes they brought from home during the lunch break would make the prisoners mouths water.

There were two occasions during winter when about one meter of snow accumulated. Even when it snowed heavily or rained, except on Sundays, they had to travel back and forth between the factory and the prison every day. The work was divided among groups of ten people, with two people filling fertilizer bags made from straw mats folded in half and stitched together, one person weighing the bags, two people carrying the filled bags, two people tying the bags' openings with rope, two people loading the bags onto a freight car, and one person receiving the bags on the freight car. There was a total of ten people involved in the operation.

In Mr. Kim Inho's book, there is a story about a pastor who was in prison. According to Mr. Kim, the pastor's son-in-law got malaria while in the cell, and the pastor had the medication for malaria. However, despite the son-in-law's pleading, the pastor refused to give him the medication. The pastor was quite famous and garnered respect and fame from many believers even after his release. Mr. Kim, knowing about the pastor's behavior in the prison, developed mixed feelings towards him.

After the interview, while engaging in small talk with Mr.

Kim, the journalist finally asked, "What kind of person is Rev. Sun Myung Moon?" Immediately, Mr. Kim replied, "He is a living God." The journalist couldn't understand the words right away. Mr. Kim continued, "Jesus, Confucius, Buddha, Muhammad, and other saints are no longer alive in this world. The saint who exists in this world right now is Rev. Moon."

Mr. Kim testified in this way. He spent approximately a year with Father in the extremely harsh environment of the prison, known as a real hell on earth. These words come from the person who spent every day together with Father. It is extremely rare to be respected by a person who was living in such a hellish environment.

There are sayings such as, "The time in prison is the best opportunity to know a person's true character," and "Prison is a microcosm of human society, where human nature is laid bare." From these words, it is evident that Mr. Kim's testimony of "Rev. Moon being a saint" accurately grasps Father's true heart and essence. When reading memoirs of people who have recorded their experiences of forced labor or imprisonment, not only in the Heungnam Fertilizer Factory but also in other places, we find that individuals who are willing to sacrifice themselves to help others in situations where everyone forgets their humanity are truly remarkable.

According to Mr. Takeda, the journalist, Mr. Kim Inho had a pure personality and was someone who would not crack a joke but was overflowing with a sincere nature.

■ The Testimony of Mr. Park Jeonghwa (朴正華)

Park Jeonghwa (1913-1997) entered the Heungnam Labor Camp in February 1949. When Mr. Park was struggling to tie the mouth of a straw bag properly during work, Father noticed, approached him, and taught him how to do it. Sometime later, Mr. Park had a peculiar dream. An old man wearing traditional Korean clothing and with a white beard appeared in his dream. He said to Mr. Park, "Jeonghwa! Jeonghwa! Wake up. Do you know who the young man was that taught you how to tie the straw bag?" Park replied, "I don't know what crimes he committed, but he is a fellow inmate serving the same prison sentence as myself."

The old man in the dream then said, "You have been waiting for the Lord of the Second Advent since you were young, haven't you? That person is the Lord of the Second Advent." Upon waking from the dream, Mr. Park could not fully believe the old man's words but nor could he fall back to sleep either.

The next morning, after breakfast, Mr. Park searched for Father when everyone gathered together and sat behind him. No matter how much Mr. Park observed Father from behind, he couldn't possibly believe that this young man was the Lord of the Second Advent. This is because he could not find even one thing that was different from himself. While contemplating this, Father suddenly turned around and spoke to him.

"Last night, you saw me in a dream, didn't you?"

"Yes, I did."

“What were you told about me?”

“The Lord of the Second Advent, I was told that you are the Lord of the Second Advent.”

Soon after this dialogue, there was an announcement that was broadcasted saying, “Prisoner 919, please come to the office (warden’s office).” Prisoner 919 referred to Park Jeonghwa’s number. When Mr. Park went to the warden’s office, he was asked to take over the role of the head of the team because the previous leader had completed his sentence and had been released the previous day. The warden had reviewed the list of 1,500 prisoners and selected Park, who had previously held the position of battalion commander of the 2nd regiment in the People’s Army, as a suitable replacement for the team leader. Mr. Park didn’t immediately respond to the request as he thought it would be best to consult with Father, whom he respected.

After receiving guidance from Father, Mr. Park accepted the position of team leader. The team leader held significant authority, including exemption from forced labor. His job was to manage the prisoners, including deciding which tasks each prisoner would be assigned. The prisoners all wanted to work on easier tasks. The most difficult task was packing 1,300 bags of ammonium sulfate fertilizer per day. If they were transferred to the Bongung Labor Camp, they could have easier work.

When visitors brought gifts for the prisoners during visits, it was also customary to offer a portion to the team leader to maintain good relations. At that time, Mr. Park, as the team leader,

referred to Father, who was seven years younger than him, as “Master.” Mr. Park felt heartbroken that Father was taking on the most challenging work. One day, he decided to assign Father to an easier task. However, Father sternly told Mr. Park that he should not place him in such an easy position. He explained that Satan would accuse him, saying, “You survived thanks to Park Jeonghwa, who gave you an easy job during your imprisonment.”

When Father was engaged in forced labor, he received the Model Worker Award. Mr. Park, the team leader, said, “I’m truly happy that Master Moon received the Model Worker Award.” In response, Father said, “I’m not happy about receiving the award itself. I’m happy because I have overcome Satan’s temptations.” Despite being in a state of hunger and forced labor, Father fought for the salvation of humanity while constantly being aware of the invisible God and Satan.

There was an instance where Park, the team leader, gave Father a portion of mixed grain received from the prisoners. Later, when Park asked Father, “Did you eat the mixed grain I gave you earlier?” Father replied, “There were others who were hungrier than me, so I shared it all with them.”

Once Father experienced malaria. His face turned red with a high fever, yet he continued to work diligently, trembling. Seeing Father in such a state, Mr. Park pleaded, “I have prepared a room where you can rest for a week. Please rest there starting from tomorrow.” However, Father refused to rest. He became drenched in sweat, his legs wobbled, his balance faltered, and he couldn’t move

his hands as he wished. Witnessing this, the team leader grabbed Father's sleeve and begged, "Please accept the earnest plea of your disciple." But then Father replied, "I am enduring these hardships to adhere to the program of history. I understand your sincerity, but I am suffering even more than you are." Father continued with the work. Despite his physical body having long cried out in pain, Father could not rest.

Many Christians have been imprisoned and sentenced to forced labor. Many of these believers prayed, hoping that God would quickly save them from their miserable conditions. The Bible also contains records of miracles where prisoners were freed. Therefore, they prayed, expecting the same miracle to happen to them.

However, Father did not pray to God to escape from these dire circumstances and be released. Instead, Father considered God's heart of having to send him to such a place and comforted God. At the same time, Father seriously thought about why he was in this environment and what he needed to fight against and achieve victory over.

Amidst many people in forced labor suffering and dying of hunger, there would hardly be any prisoners who would refuse if the team leader offered them an easier job. As Christians, they would have rejoiced, thinking that their prayers had been answered. However, as mentioned before, when Father contracted malaria, he did not accept the team leader's offer to rest in a prepared room.

According to the testimony of Kim Inho, who suffered alongside Father in the same cell and later wrote the book *The*

Way to Come to Seoul, he never saw Father taking a bath. Even the team leader, Mr. Park, said he could never understand why Father never exposed his body.

The team leader repeatedly told Father, “Just taking off your *beoseon* (traditional Korean-style socks) and washing your feet would make you feel more comfortable.” To this, Father responded, “I know how liberating it would feel to wash and be barefoot after taking off my *beoseon*. However, my body belongs to Heaven, so I cannot violate heavenly principles.” In other words, Father’s body belonged to God, and he couldn’t expose his skin in front of others because it was not yet permitted by God. Reflecting on these words, it becomes clear that even during the hot summers in Seoul, years after leaving the Heungnam labor camp, Father never wore short sleeves or exposed his arms.

In this way, Father lived in absolute obedience to God’s commands even within the confines of the labor camp. When Father contracted malaria and the team leader extended a helping hand, Father firmly rejected it, considering that taking a rest would not align with God’s Will and thought that Satan would make accusations. He resolutely refused and obediently followed God’s Will. It was similar to when Father received Heaven’s command in 1946 to cross the 38th parallel and obeyed it with absolute obedience.

Studying Father’s life, it is evident that Father has absolute obedience to God’s commands no matter what kind of situation he may be in. Even when those commands seemed impossible or when

obeying them endangered his own life, Father strictly adhered to them.

When Father first met Team Leader Park, Father shared with him about John the Baptist not being able to fulfill his mission, Mary not being able to fulfill her responsibility, and that Jesus' crucifixion was not the Will of God. When Mr. Park doubted Father's words, Heaven gave Mr. Park a punishment to make him believe in Father. However, Father did not delve into the details of the Principle during their conversations.

Park Jeonghwa's period of confinement in the Heungnam labor camp lasted from February 1949 to August 2, 1950.

4) The United Nations Participates in the Korean War, June 25, 1950 -God's Providence to Rescue the Lord of the Second Advent

● The Outbreak of the Korean War and Heungnam Labor Camp

The Korean War broke out early in the morning of June 25, 1950. According to Mr. Kim Inho, who was imprisoned with Father, the prisoners in the camp were informed about the Korean War as follows:

At 4 o'clock in the early morning of June 25, under the instructions of the American imperialists, soldiers from the South initiated a large-scale military invasion

across the entire area of the 38th parallel. Our brave soldiers immediately counterattacked and courageously repelled the enemy. Comrades were urged not to be shaken by any situation and to fulfill their duties.

In the camp, voices announcing the victories of the People's Army resonated daily. The *Nodong Sinmun* newspaper read out during the evening "reading session" prominently featured articles reporting the victories of North Korea. However, after the war began, the prisoners' meals worsened. Visits were prohibited, so mixed grain became unavailable, and most prisoners fell into a critical condition, resulting in a significant increase in the number of deaths.

The UN forces initiated bombings of North Korea. The bombing of the Heungnam Fertilizer Factory took place on August 1, 1950. Fifty B-29 bombers launched a fierce attack on the industrial zone of Heungnam. A total of 1,500 bombs weighing a total of 750 tons were dropped. The factory had reinforced concrete air-raid shelters, but they were occupied by civilians, leaving no room for prisoners. This led to a division between life and death. Ironically, the death toll was significantly higher among the civilians who occupied the shelters, while the number of deaths among the prisoners who could not enter them was relatively low. According to Chief Park Jeonghwa, 2,700 civilians and 270 prisoners died.

On August 1, the day of the bombing, the faces of the prisoners were frozen like those of the dead. Amidst this, according

to Chief Park, only Father maintained a calm expression, as if the bombing had had no effect. Father knew in advance that such events would occur and that God would protect the area within a twelve-meter radius around him. Father had informed close associates to stay close to him. During the bombing, Father was absorbed in meditation alone.

● Liberation from Heungnam Labor Camp

The South Korean army broke through the 38th parallel and advanced north on October 1, 1950. On October 10, they captured the city of Wonsan, located south of Heungnam. Upon learning of the UN forces' northward advance, the Communist Party began killing many Korean prisoners. They engaged in cruel massacres by firing machine guns, throwing grenades, and setting fire to gasoline-soaked areas.

Heungnam is located several tens of kilometers away from Hamheung. On October 12, at Heungnam forced labor camp, around seventy prisoners with sentences of more than seven years were taken to a mountain located several tens of kilometers away and were massacred there. Father's original sentence was five years (reduced to three years and four months on September 9, 1948). The day before the scheduled massacre of Father and the other prisoners, the U.S. Air Force's B-29 bombers conducted intense bombings on the Heungnam fertilizer factory and its surroundings. This occurred on October 14.

Father was released on this day. October 14 is

commemorated annually in the church as “Release from the North Korean Prison Day.” It is not celebrated as the day Father was released from Heungnam labor camp but rather as a day to offer gratitude towards God.

Later, Father produced a film called *Oh! Incheon*, which revolved around the theme of the Korean War. This was not for his personal sake but to emphasize God as the center and to educate people about loving their country. It aimed to accurately convey the fact that North Korea had invaded South Korea and also expressed gratitude to General MacArthur and the UN forces.

● Father’s Thoughts about Life in Heungnam Labor Camp

Father lived for two years and five months in Heungnam labor camp, where death was ever present. It was the harshest environment, but it can also be said that this period was the closest experience Father had with God. Here are some fragments of Father’s words about this period:

My life in prison was not a sad one for me. It was the ultimate dojo for me. It was a place that made me contemplate whether I could truly love humanity from the bottom of my heart, whether I could genuinely love my enemies, and whether I could live in close proximity with death row inmates, breathing the same air and being physically close to them.

Through my two years and eight months in the concentration camp, I experienced firsthand the evil of communism. I witnessed the worst inhumanity of Marxist ideology with my own eyes. I realized that if communists were left unchecked, the world would be destroyed at their hands. Afterward, I dedicated myself to fighting and overcoming the communist ideology. Just as fire is subdued by fire, one ideology can only be conquered by another. Therefore, the method of our battle, in which we risk our lives today, is a battle of ideologies. This war is not fought solely with military force. And I discovered that the core of the evil of communism lies in its denial of the existence of God. It lies in its denial of the eternal life of human beings.

All Communist Party members are blatant liars. When I was in prison, the director of the facility would lie every day. He would say things like, “Chairman Kim Il-sung gives the prisoners fresh beef and a few grams of rice every day, so we have good meals and our health is robust, which helps us work efficiently in the factory.” ...The Communist Party doesn’t hesitate to use lies and any means to achieve its goals. Slander and conspiracy are its specialties.

When I open my mouth, the spirit world is mobilized

and will begin evangelizing. My prisoner number is 596. In someone's dream, they appear and say, 'In room so-and-so, there is a person with the number 596. Do not touch the mixed grain you received as a gift, but take it to that person.'

Twice a year, we receive one apple as part of our ration. Most people immediately stuffed it into their mouths and finished eating it within a minute. But I thought, 'What a beautiful color. Let's savor this color! Now let's savor the taste!' Then, it is no longer just the act of eating. When eating, while offering a prayer before God, I could eat with the pride of being the first person in the world to eat while thinking in this way.

When I left the prison, I want to leave it with a scene where the prisoners shed tears with a more heartrending feeling than when parents separate from their children, and I have been working with that kind of heart.

To express the last quote more simply, it means that Father wanted to establish a heartistic relationship (a bond) to the point that when the prisoners parted from Father, they would feel more sad and painful, than they would if they parted from their parents. Father lived in the prison with the heart of a parent of parents, in other words, he loved the prisoners as his own children with the

heart of a True Parent.

In fact, when released from Heungnam labor camp, prisoner Moon Jeongbin had a beloved wife and children in Hamhung, but he chose to leave his home and follow Father. When Father was evacuating from Pyeongyang, Kim Wonpil had his mother in Pyeongyang, but he chose to abandon his mother and home to be with Father. This indicates that Father had built a relationship with Mr. Kim that was deeper than the parent-child bond.

Father went to Pyongyang, where his followers were, bringing mixed grain and wearing the traditional Korean socks that Ok Seheon had made with the utmost devotion, using her own hair.

● From Heungnam to Pyeongyang where Father's Followers Were Located

October 14, 1945, was the day when Kim Il-sung (thirty-three years old at that time) appeared publicly for the first time in front of the people in Pyeongyang. Father was released from Heungnam labor camp five years later on October 14, 1950. At that time, Father was 30 years old and headed to Pyongyang where his followers were.

On October 13, Mao Zedong announced the sending of military support for North Korea. In such a period, Father departed from Heungnam and arrived in Pyeongyang on October 24, ten days later. The next day, on October 25, the Chinese People's Volunteer Army entered the Korean War.

Kim Il-sung secretly escaped from Pyeongyang in a luxury

car on October 12 (some sources state October 16). On the other hand, President Syngman Rhee visited Pyeongyang on October 30 and attended the Pyeongyang City Welcome Rally held at Pyeongyang City Hall Square.

● Father Composes the Lyrics for Holy Song Number 2, “New Song of Holy Concern” (New Song of Inspiration)

Father spent two years and eight months in Heungnam labor camp, which corresponds to the public course of Jesus, and emerged victorious in his battle against Satan. By evangelizing and raising up more than twelve disciples, symbolizing the twelve apostles that Jesus lost, Father established the condition to restore through indemnity everything that Jesus had lost, leading to his release from the labor camp.

Father composed the second verse of the Korean Holy Song “New Song of Holy Concern” (New Song of Inspiration) during his time in prison thinking about the future of God’s providence as well as an expression of gratitude for the indescribable pain God endured and the loving concern and trouble God went through during Father’s life in prison. It is believed that Father wrote this verse shortly after arriving in Pyeongyang on October 24.

When Father left Heungnam labor camp, he brought with him some mixed grain as provisions. It took ten days to travel to Pyeongyang, but Father endured hunger without ever touching the mixed grain. During this period, even when going through the mountains, all the villagers had evacuated, and there was no food

except for slightly rotten and frozen potatoes, as recalled by Kim Wonpil. Father consumed only a small portion of those slightly rotten potatoes and arrived in Pyeongyang in a state of hunger.

About three days after arriving in Pyeongyang, Father gathered two or three disciples, dissolved the powdered mixed grain in water, stirred it with chopsticks made in the labor camp, and made rice cakes. He then distributed them to each person there, explaining what he had done in the labor camp. The reason Father did not consume the powdered mixed grain he brought from the camp himself was that he wanted to give the most valuable thing he could offer to his followers. For Father, those few followers represented all of humanity and were people to be loved.

In one of Father's Words, Father said, "Let us become people who hunger to give." Father always sought to give the best, but he did not keep things for himself while giving leftovers to others. Instead, even in a state of having nothing, Father sacrificed himself to give.

This is the same as during Father's time in Seoul as a student, Father fasted to save money, which he then lent to his fellow students. Father practiced God's love, in other words, true love. Father repeatedly explained true love in the following way:

What kind of love is true love? The essence of true love is not a love that seeks to receive, but a love that seeks to give first, for the sake of others and the whole. It is a love that continues to give without even remembering one has given. It is a love that

gives joyfully. It is the joy and loving heart of a mother who embraces her baby and gives it milk. It is a sacrificial love, like the joy children feel when being filial to their parents.

After arriving in Pyeongyang, Father stayed there for forty days (from October 24 to December 4) to inform his disciples that he had safely returned from Heungnam labor camp. Father wanted to visit his parents and siblings in Jeongju, but he prioritized meeting his disciples before meeting his own family. Father believed that this was the path of following God to visit his hometown only after finding all of his disciples. However, when he had found all of his disciples, circumstances arose that prevented him from going to his hometown.

● Forty-Day Sojourn in Pyeongyang

Due to the involvement of the Chinese army, the UN forces were forced to retreat from Pyeongyang. Consequently, people began evacuating to the south. However, even under such circumstances, Father did not immediately evacuate southward. This was because he had not yet delivered the news of his safe return to an elderly woman who was over eighty years old. On December 3rd, General MacArthur ordered the UN forces to abandon Pyeongyang and retreat to the 38th parallel.

On the same day, the central part of the defense line in Pyeongyang, represented by the Seongcheon (成川) area, was

captured by the Chinese army, and a large force poured in through this breach. Citizens began evacuating early in the morning. The next day on December 4, the UN forces withdrew from Pyeongyang. At that time, the iron bridge over the Daedong River in Pyeongyang was destroyed by the bombing of the UN forces. The evacuees were unable to use the bridge and started to cross the river along the destroyed steel beams, risking their lives.

From the evening of December 4 until noon on the following day, the number of refugees who crossed the Daedong River exceeded 50,000 people. Due to the retreat of the South Korean and UN forces, many North Korean residents began heading south, and the columns of refugees filled the roads leading south. The refugees escaped North Korea while battling cold, illness, and hunger.

When Kim Wonpil finally found the elderly woman he had been looking for, she was on the verge of dying. Mr. Kim informed her that Father had safely left the labor camp. Upon hearing this news, Father finally said, "Well then, let's evacuate now."

Why couldn't Father evacuate until he met this elderly woman? Father could not evacuate until he met that elderly woman because she had always come to the church when Father was preaching in Pyeongyang and had wanted to sit next to him and touch his clothes. Father said that if someone like her, who had lived for God and made great contributions, were disregarded, God would accuse him. Father had to be in a position respected by heaven, earth, and even sympathized with by his followers' ancestors and descendants.

Due to this, the evacuation of Father and his group was delayed. It was a critical moment that required immediate action. Father was well aware of this, and although one might have expected him to immediately escape Pyeongyang, Father did not. Father asked Kim Wonpil to bring Park Jeonghwa, a disciple who had served as the head prisoner at the Heungnam Labor Camp. When Mr. Kim visited Mr. Park's house, he found that Mr. Park was the only one left there. It was because Mr. Park had fractured his leg. Mr. Park's family had thought that his injury would be a burden during the evacuation, so they had departed before him, leaving behind a bicycle and a dog.

At that time, when Mr. Kim came to search for him, Mr. Park was overjoyed. He thought that Father had also abandoned him and evacuated first. Mr. Kim loaded him and his bicycle onto a handcart and returned to where Father was.

Afterward, Father and his group returned to Mr. Park's house. The house was located on a hill where they could overlook Pyeongyang. At that time, as the UN forces were retreating and firing shells, they could not sleep due to the sound. According to Mr.

Park, when the eastern sky began to brighten, Father said the following:

I came to Pyeongyang to make it the second Jerusalem. However, because the (Christian) saints in Pyeongyang rejected me, in the future, Pyeongyang will become a stronghold of the communist army.

This statement bears a striking resemblance to the following scripture that Jesus spoke to the unbelieving people nearly 2,000 years ago:

Jerusalem, Jerusalem, you who kill the prophets and stone those sent to you, how often I have longed to gather your children together, as a hen gathers her chicks under her wings, and you were not willing. Look, your house is left to you desolate. (Matthew 23:37-38).

Even for a healthy young person, the journey of evacuation was extremely difficult. Yet Father, along with Mr. Park Jeonghwa, who had a fractured leg, and Mr. Kim Wonpil, set out from Pyongyang to Busan. Since the main roads were being used by soldiers, the evacuees had no choice but to walk on unpaved paths and embankments.

Mr. Park sat on the bicycle and steered with the handlebars. His right foot pedaled while his left foot, in a cast, could not reach the pedals. Father pushed the bicycle from behind, and Mr. Kim followed, carrying their belongings.

On the evening of December 4, the three of them, considerably behind the line of evacuees, crossed the Daedong River in a small boat and escaped Pyeongyang. It was a cold departure on a day when it was snowing, as if it was symbolizing the hardships they would have to endure. Just as Father had made a determination when entering the Heungnam labor camp, saying,

“I will take responsibility for the most difficult thing,” he also made a commitment at that time, saying, “I will be the one who struggles the most among the refugees.”

Their attire was as follows: Father wore Mr. Park’s camel leather coat over his traditional Korean attire, with his head wrapped in a scarf. Mr. Kim Wonpil wore a coat made from Mr. Park’s dog’s fur, and Mr. Park himself wore a spring coat.

During the evacuation, Moon Jeongbin, who had accompanied Father from the Heungnam labor camp, missed the opportunity to join them and could not travel south with them. The fact that Father embarked on the evacuation without bringing the traditional Korean socks made from Ok Sehyeon’s hair, which Father had brought from the Heungnam labor camp, illustrates the confusion at the time. Later, Ok Sehyeon cut her hair again and made another pair of traditional Korean socks because Father cherished them so much.

● Father Composes the Lyrics for Holy Song Number 3, “Gift of Glory”(Blessing of Glory)

Father arrived in Pyeongyang on October 24 and instructed Mr. Kim Wonpil to search for the disciples and others who were in Pyeongyang, and he stayed there for forty days. On October 25, the Chinese People’s Volunteer Army entered the Korean War, and General MacArthur ordered the UN forces to abandon Pyeongyang and retreat to the 38th parallel by December 3.

Father left Pyeongyang and went to the “Land of

Freedom,” the Republic of Korea, and to express gratitude to God for bestowing upon him the “Blessing of Glory” to embark on a new providence on the victorious foundation in North Korea, Father wrote the lyrics for the Korean Holy Song number 3, “Blessing of Glory” (English Holy Song number 1). It is believed that the lyrics were composed in early December 1950. Finally, Father met with the elderly woman he was supposed to see in Pyeongyang and, on the evening of December 4, crossed the Daedong River in a small boat, escaping from Pyeongyang and beginning the journey southward.

● Heading South as Refugees from Pyeongyang

The number of refugees heading to South Korea continued to increase, surging like waves. It was impossible to trace back through the crowd, and once separated, it was even challenging for people to find each other again. One day, Mr. Kim Wonpil lost sight of Father, but fortunately, they were able to reunite.

Among the refugees, there were North Korean spies disguising themselves as refugees and spreading misinformation to sow confusion among the people. Due to the presence of such spies, the UN forces sometimes resorted to firing machine guns at the refugees. Father and his group witnessed the heartbreaking sight of a mother being shot by the UN forces, with her child crying while clinging to her wounded back.

After about a week of travel, they had to climb a mountain pass. It was difficult to overcome the uphill slope,

especially with heavy loads. It was particularly challenging to carry a large man like Mr. Park, who had injured his leg, on a bicycle up the hill. No matter how many attempts they made, they could not cross the mountain pass. The Chinese People's Volunteer Army was rapidly approaching. At that moment, Mr. Park kneeled in front of Father and pleaded, "Master, if we continue like this, the two of you will die because of me. Please leave me behind and go ahead."

Father responded sternly and angrily to Mr. Park at that time, saying, "Didn't we promise that we are bound by God's will, and that whether we live or die, we will be together?"

Park was deeply moved upon hearing these words. Father carried Mr. Park on his back and swiftly crossed the mountain pass. Mr. Kim pushed the bicycle and followed behind. Believing in Father's Word, "If the three of us become one, Heaven will protect us," Mr. Park obediently followed Father.

When they arrived at a place with beautifully laid-out lawns, the group rested for a while. At that time, Father said, "Let's go hunting." It wasn't hunting with guns to shoot pheasants. The three of them were refugees who didn't know if they would receive meals from others. The "hunting" Father referred to was catching the lice hiding in their undergarments. They had been wearing the same clothes for almost a month, so there were numerous lice lurking in their underwear. It would have been futile to catch them one by one. They broke off a branch from a nearby pine tree and used it to beat their underwear, causing the lice to fall off. The underwear with the most lice was the one worn by the young Mr. Kim.

● What Happened at Yongmae Island (Yongmae-do) and Prayers at the 38th Parallel

Afterwards, Father and his group headed towards Yongmae Island, located a few kilometers off the coast (at the entrance of Haeju Bay on the southern coast of South Hwanghae Province). It is located approximately nineteen kilometers west of the island where the “Yeonpyeong Island artillery bombardment incident” by North Korea took place on November 23, 2010.

Father heard a rumor that there was a boat from Yongmae Island to Incheon. Father knew that he had an acquaintance who owned a fishing boat there. So, the group decided to go to Yongmae Island. However, the journey there was not easy.

In the middle of the night, they waited for low tide. Father rolled up the legs of his pants and carried Mr. Park, who had a similar weight as Father himself, on his back. They began crossing the dark sea path where they couldn't see their own feet. Walking barefoot, shells and pebbles pierced the soles of their feet. They could not stop to rest or even collapse. It was a treacherous path, akin to walking on thin ice. At this time, Mr. Kim brought the bicycle and carried the luggage, following behind.

During this most painful time, Father thought to himself, “I am on the path to save humanity, so I must be able to accept sufferings worse than this without hesitation. Even if this path continues for a lifetime, I will go on. This is a good opportunity to make such a resolution before God.” With this determination, he reaffirmed his resolve.

Father and his two companions arrived safely at their destination, Yongmae Island, before sunrise. However, Father's acquaintance was not there, perhaps having already evacuated. When they boarded the ship bound for Incheon, the ship was filled with people, and all civilians except military personnel and police officers were asked to disembark. They had to turn back along the path they had risked their lives to get to the island. It was a desperate situation. What could Father say to Mr. Kim and Mr. Park? The hope of crossing to the south by boat to Incheon was gone. Returning on the same path they had just traveled amidst cold and hunger would be a trial beyond human limits.

After many years, on the commemoration day of Father's liberation from the Heungnam labor camp (October 14), Mr. Kim testified before the members of the church about his round trip to Yongmae Island.

"I still find it hard to believe how Father could endure such difficulties." At that moment, Father, who was quietly listening, briefly spoke.

"If I couldn't carry that one person (Mr. Park Jeonghwa, who had injured his leg) across the sea, I cannot fulfill the Will for the restoration of the cosmos." And Father continued.

"Because I thought that this one person was a representative of the cosmos, a cosmic force supported me."

The Chinese character 天 (Cheon: Heaven) in the word 天宙 (Cheonju: Cosmos) means the spirit world, and the character 宙 (Ju: universe, space) in the word 天宙 (Cheonju: Cosmos) means the earthly world. This term is a new concept. At that moment, Mr.

Kim realized that Father considered Mr. Park, whom he carried on his back, as a representative of the cosmic realm.

On the way back from Yongmae Island, Mr. Park and Mr. Kim were feeling down and had lost their energy. Father said to them, "Today, we will meet someone who will welcome us." Encouraged by these words, the two of them persevered and walked the difficult sea path, returning to the shore from where they had departed for Yongmae Island the previous night. It was already dark and very cold when they arrived in the village. At that moment, Father was mistaken as a straggler soldier or a spy from the People's Army and was attacked by members of the local self-defense unit. This is because South Korean soldiers had normal length hair, while the soldiers in the People's Army in North Korea had very short hair. At that time, Father's hair was still very short.

Mr. Kim and Mr. Park explained that Father was a pastor who had his hair cut while being imprisoned in North Korea, but they did not believe them. When they searched through Father's belongings, they found a Bible. However, they still did not believe him and concluded that he was a spy posing as a pastor. Unable to bear it, Mr. Park tried to retaliate against the self-defense unit members, and Father intervened to stop him.

One of the self-defense unit members told Father to recite John 3:16 from the New Testament. It is a well-known verse that any Christian would know. When Father fluently answered with the words of that verse, "For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life," the misunderstanding was finally

cleared up.

After this incident, Father's group encountered a young couple who warmly welcomed them. They were deacons of the village church and led the choir. They had received a revelation saying, "A precious person will come, so make preparations to welcome him."

Following that revelation, the couple had prepared new bedding and delicious food they had acquired for their wedding. The room with the laid-out bedding was the warmest room. In this way Father's words, "We will meet someone who will welcome us," came true.

Through this experience, Mr. Kim later realized something. It was that in exchange for the suffering (trial) Father endured when he was assaulted, they received warm bedding, a comfortable room, and delicious meals.

Reflecting on that time, Mr. Kim regretted that he had only thought about himself and couldn't understand Father's heart (*simjeong*). He felt deeply sorry for having caused Father suffering due to his own inadequacy.

Afterward, Father's group traveled further south to the 38th parallel. At that time, Father secretly crossed the 38th parallel while making a vow to himself, "I will unify the North and South with my own hands," and offered a tearful prayer before God. Father never forgot this prayer throughout his lifetime.

Father's perspective on the reunification of North and South Korea is significantly different from what ordinary people may think. The divided Korean Peninsula, with one side

representing the world of democracy and the other side representing the world of communism, is a microcosm of the divided global order. The reunification of the Korean Peninsula is directly linked to the unification of the world of democracy and the world of communism. Therefore, without the reunification of North and South Korea, there cannot be peace and unity in the world centered on God. Father stated that the reunification of North and South Korea and the unification of the two major worlds could only be accomplished based on the absolute values derived from the new truth centered on God.

● From Seoul to Busan

Father and his group arrived in Seoul on December 27, 1950. Seoul was a place Father had spent his student days, and it was like a second home where he had lived with his wife after studying in Japan. It had already been four and a half years since Father had received the command from God to go north and left his wife and child behind.

However, there is no record or testimony indicating that Father ever went to meet his wife and child during this time. Considering Father's actions up until then, it is speculated that Father chose not to meet them or, more accurately, could not meet them even if Father had wanted to meet them.

When they visited the home of Mr. Gwak Nopil, who had undergone torture together with Father during the Japanese colonial period at the Gyeonggi Province Police Department, he was not

there because he had already fled further south. Father's group visited the house of Lee Gibong, where they had used to board in the past, and stayed there instead.

While staying in Seoul, Father was required to undergo a military examination. Once again, due to his short hair, he was suspected of being a deserter. This is because it was a time when many people were evacuating, making it difficult to distinguish between spies and soldiers. Allowing North Korean spies to infiltrate the military would have caused serious problems. In such a situation, on the last day of that year, Father and Mr. Kim underwent a physical examination in front of Changdeokgung Palace in Seoul. Both of them received a failed evaluation. They received certificates of exemption from military service, classified as "Class C."

Later, on July 4, 1955, Father was arrested in Seoul due to a certain incident. One of the reasons for his arrest was suspected violation of military service law. It was later revealed that Father had been exempted from military service.

When Father's group arrived in Seoul, they had no food supplies. They had to find food. Most of the people in Seoul had evacuated, leaving only the elderly behind. Mr. Kim tried to enter an abandoned house in search of food but found all the doors nailed shut. Since you could not search for food if you could not enter the houses, Mr. Kim climbed over a fence of a certain house and went inside. He searched desperately. Upon entering a room, he realized that someone had been there moments before as the bedding was still laid out. Mr. Kim opened all the drawers and

searched for food.

At that moment, he found a small bag-like object under the bedding. Opening it, he discovered rice inside. Mr. Kim joyfully brought the rice and cooked it for a meal. They could finally have a meal. Then, Father asked Mr. Kim where he had obtained the rice.

After hearing Mr. Kim's story, Father said the following:

"You must return more than three times the amount of this rice later."

According to Mr. Kim, any ordinary person during wartime would eat without thinking if they were hungry. However, Father, after having said that, did not touch the food. Mr. Kim believed that Father's Word of "returning more than three times the amount" was true and responded, "Yes, I understand." Only then did Father begin to eat.

As I listened to Mr. Kim's testimony, it reminded me of a childhood memory of Father in his hometown of Jeongju. There was a time when Father's mother gave Father a Korean melon (chamoe). During that time, there was the following exchange between Father and his mother:

"Where did this melon come from?"

"What do you mean by 'where'? Your older brother bought it."

"Which farm did he buy it from? Who picked it for you? Was it Grandma? Grandpa? Or maybe Uncle?"

Father became very concerned about even a single melon and how it had been obtained. He thought it might have been

bought from a thief.

“I don’t mind dying of starvation. I won’t eat something of unknown origin,” was Father’s belief. This anecdote brings to mind the saying, “Even when thirsty, I won’t drink stolen spring water.” Even after about twenty years had passed since that time, Father was still concerned about how rice was obtained.

Most people probably never bothered to think about where the rice came from and simply ate their meals. How many people among the refugees would say, “I must return three times as much”? Moreover, Father didn’t touch his meal until Mr. Kim answered, “Yes.”

Let me explain the circumstances that Father’s group was in at that time. In early January 1951, when the Chinese People’s Liberation Army launched the “New Year Offensive,” Randolph, a journalist for the Associated Press, reported on the dire situation of the refugees fleeing from the North to Busan as follows:

Thousands and tens of thousands of pitiful crowds are fleeing from the invasion of the Chinese People’s Liberation Army, desperately walking 200 miles southward towards Busan in hopes of survival. This flow of refugees is like the waves of the vast ocean. When you wake up in the morning and step outside, hundreds of thousands of refugees are walking. They walk tirelessly all day. Even when we go to bed, they continue to walk.

While people are wrapped in warm blankets,

they are walking along dark streets. The fate given from heaven is just too harsh. The areas where defense lines of the United Nations forces collapsed and refugees began evacuating are now experiencing intense cold and it has been snowing since three days ago. The cotton clothes the refugees are wearing are completely soaked. Since yesterday, the cold has become even more severe, and their clothes, still on their bodies, have completely frozen.

The journalist Randolph reported vivid scenes of the refugees heading to Busan, including an old woman whose leg had been amputated after being hit by a 105 mm howitzer shell and a woman who gave birth by the roadside and threw the newborn baby into a ditch without anyone in the family trying to stop her.

At that time, Mr. Park, who had a broken leg, had recovered enough to walk on his own. He decided to stay in Gyeongju (North Gyeongsang Province) until he fully recovered, while Father and Mr. Kim traveled together from Gyeongju to Busan.

5) Refugee Life in Busan and Writing the “Original Divine Principle”

● Mr. Eom Deokmun’s Testimony

On January 27, 1951, Father and Mr. Kim arrived in Busan, looking

like destitute wanderers. Busan was overflowing with refugees. Schools were closed, and factories were shut down. It was considered fortunate if one could find a place to sleep even in warehouse-like locations. The streets were also crowded with people. On January 8, 1951, in an article titled “When Will the 38th Parallel be Reopened?” Associated Press correspondent Shin Hwabong described the situation in Busan as follows:

This dusty port town is now revealing tragic scenes everywhere. Busan is overflowing with refugees who have fled from various regions, and the population has already reached one million, excluding military personnel. This is twice the number before the war began. As of early January, the only major port occupied by the United Nations forces is Busan. It is not an exaggeration to say that all soldiers and supplies heading to the battlefield from the sea route depart from this port. Therefore, there is something special about the flusteredness in this port.

By early January, the number of refugees in Busan had exceeded 500,000. The refugees, regardless of age or gender, were dirty from not having taken a proper bath for a long time, and most of them had caught colds. The refugees all had vacant eyes filled with despair and resignation.

Throughout Busan, thousands of refugees were living by utilizing buildings and walls on the roadside to create small rooms.

Most of them were makeshift shelters, but some were enclosed with wooden boards. When you approached, you could see that the wooden boards were made by breaking up wooden crates containing U.S. military supplies. Even a slightly strong wind or rain fall would cause these small rooms to collapse in an instant.

On January 27, Father stayed at the train station building, and on the following day, the 28th, he happened to meet Mr. Gwak Nopil, who had experienced hardships together with him during the late Japanese colonial period at the Gyeonggi Province Police Department. Mr. Gwak lived on the second floor of a restaurant across from Busan Station. Father stayed there for three days. Mr. Gwak recalls the following retrospective story about Father during that time:

When I met Master Moon at my house in Busan, it was during the wartime. Master Moon talked about the unified world and dreamlike stories. He also spoke of hope that Korea would become the center of the world. At that time, honestly, I thought Master. Moon was a strange person. His words were completely lacking in persuasiveness.

Furthermore, on January 31, at a place called “Forty Steps” near the Busan Station, Father reunited with Mr. Eom Deokmun, a friend from Father’s time studying in Japan. According to Mr. Eom, Father’s impression at the time of their reunion had completely changed. He saw Father as a respected figure, more like a mentor

than just a friend. The following is from an interview with Mr. Eom:

On January 31, 1951, around 3 p.m., I reunited with a young man, who I used to meet often, in front of the Busan Station at a place called “Forty Steps”. He was dressed like a refugee.

“Hey, is that you, Moon?”

“Oh, it’s you!”

We said as we embraced. I said to Master Moon, “You used to read the Bible a lot during our student days. How about telling me about Christian things?” Saying that, I took him to my house. When I listened to him talk, the content was amazing.

However, the landlady was a difficult old woman. She looked like the witch from “Snow White,” with freckles on her face and a hoarse voice, a scary person. The landlady told Father to leave. After a while, she seemed to hate me as well and shouted, “Everyone, get out!”

On Sundays, Kim Wonpil and Ok Sehyeon came, and we held a service on the second floor. The five of us, including my wife and I, held the service together. Father sat and gave a sermon without using the Bible, and the sermon time was short. The prayer was serious, but it had a homely atmosphere.

Mr. Kim worked at a cafeteria. They used a lot of water there, so he wore rubber shoes with bare feet. When Mr. Kim climbed the stairs, he left behind footsteps. The landlady got angry when she saw that. That was not all. She got furious if the toilet was even slightly dirty.

The landlady told us, “I want the second-floor room empty

for my husband's sixtieth birthday, so please leave." We put our luggage next to the entrance, and then she told us to leave the house altogether, so we left the house. We wandered around with two young children, carrying bedding and belongings, with nowhere to go, in the rain.

Afterwards, we were able to rent two rooms at a relative's house. One room was for my wife and children, and in the other room, Master Moon and I slept, joined later by Mr. Kim. Master Moon talked to me without resting until 1 or 2 a.m. The landlady knew about our situation and said, "It's strange for a husband and wife to live in separate rooms. What are you doing all night? I feel uncomfortable, so leave my house." And she kicked us out.

About a month after renting that room, I sent my wife and children to Masan (South Gyeongsang Province), and I left that house. I slept and stayed in the car of a company president (Kim Yeonggu), while Master Moon and Mr. Kim started living in a laborers' dormitory. It was a room about two tatami mats in size. The room was partitioned by a sliding door made of wood and paper, but part of the paper in the sliding door was torn, so the situation in the neighboring room was fully visible.

Through this testimony from Mr. Eom Deokmun, we can see how cautious Master Moon was while living as a tenant. Mr. Eom, through Master Moon's words and actions, started using honorifics and began to treat him with the utmost respect, saying that "Master Moon is not just my friend but a teacher. No, in fact a great saint, and a philosopher."

Mr. Eom treated Father, who was even wearing a jacket

that smelled of unwashed refugees, with the highest respect. He polished the silverware he had used and let Father use it, and used his wife's silverware for himself. Part of the reason Mr. Eom could do such things was because he had received revelations in dreams that Father was a great person, but more importantly, it was because Father was someone he could trust. Mr. Eom believed that Master Moon was the "Second Coming of Jesus."

During this time, Father started working at the Pier 3 in Busan. Father worked at the pier at night and rested during the day under the eaves of other people's houses or in sunny spots on the mountain. Father met Kim Wondeok, a person who had become Father's disciple in Heungnam labor camp, and began living at his house in late April 1951.

It was at this house that Father started writing the "Original Divine Principle" from May 11, 1951. The "Original Divine Principle" was written in pencil on five notebook-like books. It was a compilation of the teachings and revelations Father received from God. Father completed writing this book on May 10, 1952, so that means that it took one year. Eom Deokmun described the circumstances when Father started writing the "Original Divine Principle" as follows:

It was written with a pencil on half-sized straw paper. Master wrote hastily at such speed that the speed of writing exceeded the speed of sharpening pencils. Mr. Kim Wonpil, who was beside him, sharpened the pencils and handed them to Master Moon.

In the evening, when the laborers returned, they would make noises, sing songs, and drink soju. Although the rooms were divided by partitions, there was only one window in the middle, so the voices carried through. Feeling that they could not stay there any longer, they searched for a place in the mountains and built a dugout hut.

Regarding the process leading to the writing of the “Original Divine Principle”, Kim Wonpil explained:

When Master Moon was in Pyeongyang, he already had a conceptualized version of the “Original Divine Principle”. It was not the same as the one written in Busan but was written in notebooks. The “Original Divine Principle” was further systematized. Father left the original manuscript of the “Original Divine Principle” behind when he went to the Heungnam labor camp. Master entrusted the notebooks to one of his followers, Pastor Cha Sangsun. However, at that time, it was dangerous to possess such materials, so Pastor Cha disposed of them.

Kim Wondeok further described the situation at that time:

After finishing writing of the “Original Divine Principle” in the Beomnaetgol hut Father had built, he asked me to bring the “Original Divine Principle” to Kim Baekmun, who was in Busan, so I took it to him.

After about a month, I went to retrieve the “Original Divine Principle” from Kim Baekmun’s place. Later, I went with Master to meet Kim Baekmun. There is a portion in the “Original Divine Principle” that corresponds to the chapter on the Second Advent, which I transcribed orally. I’m not sure if it was at night or early morning, but Master woke me up and said, ‘Bring paper and a pencil.’ When I turned on the light, Master spoke as if he were reading from a book, and I desperately wrote it down.

There was a time when some people started whispering about how Father’s teachings might have plagiarized the writings of Kim Baekmun. Regarding this, Kim Wonpil said the following:

Pastor Kim Baekmun stands in the position of John the Baptist, laying the foundation for Master’s work. John the Baptist proclaimed, ‘Repent, for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand.’ Later, Jesus also said the same as John the Baptist, ‘Repent, for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand’. Does that mean Jesus plagiarized John the Baptist’s words? When God seeks to realize the ideal world through the Messiah, God will make the witness speak the Word before the coming of the Messiah, but is it okay for the Messiah to speak a different Word? The content of the Word must be the same.

Therefore, Jesus did not learn John the Baptist's Word in order to say, "Repent, for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand."

Pastor Kim Baekmun does not have the "Principle of Restoration" that Father explains. He is not able to explain the historical course of salvation. Many people try to find the "Principle (Truth)" through the Bible. However, Father discovered the "Principle" and found that it was necessary to support it based on the content of the Bible and therefore found them. That is the difference from Pastor Kim Baekmun. Some people say that Father studied for six months at the Israel Monastery, but can one master the Principle in six months?

Furthermore, Kim Wondeok continued,

If the "Original Divine Principle" were a plagiarism of Pastor Kim Baekmun's work, why would Father ask me to show him the manuscript? If it were a case of plagiarism, Pastor Kim Baekmun should have said, 'This is my teaching.' But that isn't the case, Master told me to show him the "Original Divine Principle".

Regarding this, as the author of this book, I Kim Young Hwi, would like to give a personal interpretation for the readers of this book to better understand why Father showed the "Original Divine Principle" to Kim Baekmun. Although Kim Baekmun was in a position of having failed to fulfill his responsibilities, Father

recognized him as a person appointed by God as the second John the Baptist. Even though he couldn't become John the Baptist, Father wanted to at least open a minimal path of salvation for him. That's why I believe Father had Kim Wonpil give the manuscript to Kim Baekmun. However, even when a month passed, there was no response. Therefore, Father likely thought that this was the end and visited Kim Baekmun to confirm this and sort things out. Just as John the Baptist during Jesus' time was unable to fulfill the role assigned by heaven and eventually met an unfortunate end due to trivial conflicts with others, Father believed that Kim Baekmun, too, was unable to fulfill the role assigned by heaven and would ultimately lead a life without value and meet a regrettable fate (Kim Baekmun passed away in 1990).

● Mount Sujeong Holy Ground in Busan (釜山 水晶山 聖地)

In late April 1951, Father stayed at the home of Kim Wondeok, and it was there that he began writing the "Original Divine Principle" on May 11, 1951. In mid-May, Father moved to a boarding house where Kim Wonpil was boarding. Even in this new residence, Father continued writing the "Original Divine Principle". The boarding house was cramped, and whenever Father lay down to rest, his head and feet would touch the walls. Eom Deokmun, who was taller than Father, had to bend his body to find a comfortable position.

At that time, Kim Wonpil worked as a painter at a U.S. military base. Sometimes, Mr. Kim would show Father the landscape paintings he created during his free time. Impressed by the

paintings, Father encouraged Mr. Kim to pursue painting as a profession. This led Mr. Kim to start painting portraits of U.S. military spouses and girlfriends in oil paintings. For someone who was used to portrait painting, it may have only taken around an hour, but for Mr. Kim, initially, it took around four and a half hours to complete a painting, but as he painted more and more, he gradually reduced the time required from four hours to three and a half hours, three hours, two hours, one hour, and eventually even as short as thirty minutes. While Mr. Kim worked on the paintings, Father engaged in his missionary activities. As the number of painting orders increased, Father also assisted in painting which expedited the process. Sometimes, Mr. Kim would only draw the faces, and Father would complete the rest of the painting. This allowed Mr. Kim to complete commissioned portraits within fifteen to twenty minutes.

Mr. Kim dedicated the entirety of his income from painting to Father. This was Mr. Kim's joy. Father reported both his income and expenses in detail to Mr. Kim. At that time, Father would express genuine remorse, using the phrase "spent" instead of "used," indicating his deep sense of accountability.

Father used the money earned by Mr. Kim to purchase rice, kerosene, and side dishes. He also bought rice and clothes for poor monks and provided them with financial support. Throughout his life, Father continued to selflessly share and sacrifice for others, even when he himself was in a state of poverty.

Here is another childhood anecdote about Father. Father's impoverished friends from his hometown would bring chestnut rice

or barley rice in their lunchboxes. Seeing this, Father would always exchange his own lunch for theirs, which consisted of chestnut or barley rice. When the parents of his friends were ill but could not go to the hospital due to lack of money, Father would tearfully plead with his own parents: "Please provide them with money so they can go to the hospital." And when he could not obtain money for them, he would shout: "I need money, so please allow me to sell this and that."

When Mr. Kim returned from work, Father would have Mr. Kim read aloud the manuscript of the "Original Divine Principle" that Father had written that day, and Father would listen attentively with his eyes closed. On Sundays, from early dawn, the voice of Father singing hymns could be heard, awakening Mr. Kim, who recalled that Father would sing hymns repeatedly while shedding tears.

Father would ascend Mount Sujeong (elevation 300 m), which was a few hundred meters away, to spend time in prayer and meditation. This is the location of the future Holy Ground of Beomnaetgol. After completing the forty-country world tour, Father visited Busan and selected this place as a Holy Ground on November 13, 1965. The members in Busan refer to the place where Father wholeheartedly prayed on the mountaintop as the First Holy Ground of Heavenly Father Mountain. From the Holy Ground of Mount Sujeong, one can overlook the harbor where Father once worked.

● Building a Small Hut in Beomnaetgol, Busan

While looking out over the port of Busan from Mount Sujeong,

Father often prayed, thinking, "I must cross that sea and go to the other country to sow the seeds for the bond of heart that I earnestly hope for." At this time, Father said that God showed him the following vision:

God is a playful person. He said to me, 'Hey, look over there. This is how the future world will be.' He showed me a large merchant ship, a heavenly merchant ship, with me on board, and comforted me by showing a multitude of people cheering for me.

In the midst of the Korean War, many ships carrying military supplies were coming and going at Busan Port. While overlooking the port, Father offered a serious prayer. It was during this time that plans were made to build a small hut. The design of this hut was done by Eom Deokmun. Since the favorable locations had already been occupied by other refugees, the spot chosen for the hut was a slightly elevated area near a communal graveyard where nobody went. To build the hut, they had no pickaxes or shovels. They used a rake to clear the slope of the mountain, carried gravel, and made mud with soil. The roof was made by folding ration boxes used by the U.S. military, but you could see the sky through the seams. When it rained, the rainwater leaked in. The size of the room was less than three tatami mats. Except for the central part of the room, if you stood up, your head would hit the ceiling. They laid down four straw mats and used the bedding that Eom Deokmun had been using.

Father, Eom Deokmun, and Mr. Kim slept on a single padded mat. When they slept, Father and Mr. Eom, who were tall, placed their heads near the window and stretched their legs towards the entrance. Mr. Kim slept in the opposite direction (head towards the entrance, legs towards the window) from the two of them. They could only enter the entrance by bending down low, and there was a small window on the opposite side. They placed an apple box on that window sill and put a pot and dishes in it. They cooked rice outside over a wood fire. Father was always the first one to wake up.

Later, the first person to be witnessed to in this dugout hut was Minister Kang Hyeonsil. She thought to herself when she saw the dugout hut, “If someone were born and died in such a poor dugout hut, how much resentment would be left behind?” Construction of this dugout hut began in September 1951, but it collapsed three times during construction and was completed in October according to Mr. Eom (the *Unification Church Annals* states that it was completed in August). Father lived in this shabby hut, considering it to be like a palace.

Mr. Eom reminisces about the time he lived with Father as follows:

From the mountaintop of Mount Sujeong you could see many American ships. They shone brightly, and while looking down on them, we sang songs. When I was young, I loved singing. However, I didn’t know popular songs. I liked classical music and arias, and

once I started singing, I wouldn't stop. Master Moon said, 'Keep going. Don't you have any other songs?' So, once I started singing, it took two hours.

Mr. Eom also talked about Father in the following way:

Even when we were sleeping at night, Master Moon did not sleep. When we fell asleep from being tired and we woke up in the middle of the night, Master Moon wouldn't be there. Master Moon would be cleaning up the house, cooking rice, waking us up, and offering us meals. His cooking skills were so excellent that there was nothing we couldn't eat.

● Father Composes the Lyrics of Korean Holy Song
Number 4 "Powers Enveloped in Darkness"
(English Holy Song Number 23, "Suffering Heart")

The place where Father lived before building the dugout hut was a small row of houses, similar to barracks, where he lived with refugees and laborers separated by partition walls and sliding doors. It was crowded, and there was constant noise. Especially at night, the voices of people drinking and singing were too loud, making it difficult for Father to write the "Original Divine Principle". That is why Father searched for a piece of land on the slope of Beomnaetgol, which was not a good location, with a lot of gravel and no one using it, and decided to build the dugout hut there.

The good locations had already been occupied by other refugees, leaving only undesirable places.

The place was close to a communal graveyard, and as the Bible says, “Where there is a corpse, there the vultures will gather.” It was a place where evil spirits were swarming, and they were very active. That is why Father mainly climbed Mount Sujeong and offered prayers there. The Korean Holy Song number 4, “Powers Enveloped in Darkness” (English Holy Song number 23, “Suffering Heart”), was composed around August-September 1951 when the opposition activities of evil spirits were particularly intense.

● Evangelist Kang Hyeonsil, the First Convert in Busan

On May 10, 1952, Father finished writing the “Original Divine Principle”. Father then climbed Mount Sujeong, which was nearby, and offered a prayer to start his missionary work. At that moment, a young woman visited him. This woman’s name was Ms. Kang Hyeonsil, a twenty-five-year-old evangelist from the Beomcheon Presbyterian Church in Busan and a student at the Goryeo (Korea) Theological School. Her father had been imprisoned and tortured to death for refusing to worship at Shinto shrines during the Japanese colonial rule. She entered the Goryeo (Korea) Theological School to carry on her father’s path.

Evangelist Kang had a daily routine of reading over sixty pages of the Bible, praying for more than three hours, and conducting missionary work in at least three houses. She visited Father because a female college student had shared a strange story

in early May.

“When I went to Beomnaetgol for missionary work, a young man told me an intriguing story. This person introduced the way for fallen humans to return to the world before the Fall. It was truly remarkable content.”

Upon hearing the story, Evangelist Kang cautioned the student as follows:

“In the Last Days, many false Christs will appear. Even if someone says that Christ is here or there, you must never approach such places. Please wait until I confirm it before going.”

Evangelist Kang prayed for a week, asking God to allow her to visit the young man if it was God’s Will or to prevent her from going if it was not God’s Will.

On May 10, while praying, Evangelist Kang believed that she should go and meet the young man. She thought of witnessing to him if this young man was a good person. It was a Saturday, and it was raining.

She did not know the young man’s name or address, but she relied on the phrase “a place where only men cook for themselves” to search for him. After asking many people, she began to approach the place and was guided by a certain lady (Ok Sehyeon) and entered what seemed to be a dugout hut. The house did not appear to be a place where people could live. It was a hut that seemed to be a dugout resembling an animal’s den. Inside the house, there was only one small room, and no one was there. Evangelist Kang offered a prayer there, looked around, and was surprised. It was a small room with a floor

area of about two tatami mats, with bare earth walls without any wallpaper covering them. Water seemed to be leaking from the ceiling, and some old rain gear-like items were spread on the floor. It was truly like a stable in the countryside. There was nothing of value there. There was only one suit jacket and a pencil neatly sharpened in a pencil holder. Evangelist Kang looked at it and thought, "I wonder if there are many children here?" It was only later she learnt that it was one of the pencils used by Mr. Kim Wonpil when he drew pictures.

A young laborer-type man entered the room. He was wearing extremely tattered clothing, with faded khaki-colored Korean-style trousers and a worn-out red-bronze colored jacket. The upper part was Western-style, while the lower part was Korean-style, creating a mismatched outfit that seemed laughable. Even in Busan, overflowing with refugees, you would not have found anyone dressed like this. Moreover, the part where Father had tied the waistband of his pants seemed to have been folded over multiple times, making it look excessively untidy. Father was wearing worn-out shoes discarded by the U.S. military. Seeing Father in such a state, Evangelist Kang found it rather unseemly. With this unkempt appearance, Father spoke to Evangelist Kang:

"The room is too cold, isn't it?" Saying this, Father laid out a padded mat.

"The room is dirty, so please take a seat on this. It's okay so please don't worry." Evangelist Kang sat on the thick padded mat.

"Where did you come from?"

“I work as a missionary at the Beomcheon Church at the foot of the mountain.”

At that moment, Evangelist Kang realized that the person in front of her was the young man who had shared the strange story.

“Ms. Evangelist, God has loved you very much for the past seven years.”

Although these words did not appear to be those of a spiritualist, upon hearing them, she recalled something from seven years ago. It was the time when she had decided to dedicate her entire life to God for the sake of the Gospel mission.

“Thank you for coming. Today is May 10, a significant day. Since coming from North Korea, I have been writing something (“Original Divine Principle”), and today I just finished it. I just finished, and I had planned to start my missionary work this afternoon.”

Before meeting her, Father had offered the following prayer on Mount Sujeong:

Father God, I want to meet a follower. You promised that all humanity would become brothers and create one world centered on the *Divine Principle*. Since coming to Busan, I have not found even one follower. Whatever happens, please send me a follower.

Father knew that the prayer he had just offered was immediately fulfilled, and in front of her, he passionately spoke as if addressing a crowd of thousands. She thought her eardrums

might burst. Father fervently spoke about how, just as Elijah had come as John the Baptist 2,000 years ago, the Messiah would come in the flesh. At that moment, Father spent about three hours explaining the “The Second Advent,” which is the final chapter of the Divine Principle. Father tore a piece of paper and wrote “Adam” on one piece and “Eve” on the other piece of paper. Father also wrote “Jesus Christ” as well, placing the papers here and there to explain.

Father also touched upon the fact that during the Korean War, Jesus’ face appeared in the clouds over North Korea, which is also mentioned in the “Original Divine Principle”.

“Do you really believe that Jesus Christ will come on a cloud?”

“I’m not sure, but that is what is written in the Bible. I believe in the words of the Bible as it is.”

When Evangelist Kang answered that way, Father said,

“Jesus Christ will never come on a cloud.”

Father explained earnestly why Jesus would not come riding on a cloud.

“Just as Elijah came as John the Baptist in the Old Testament age, if Jesus will come in the flesh and not on a cloud, there must be a place where Jesus is standing. That place is South Korea.”

Father passionately conveyed God’s Will to the person before him. Father’s voice was so loud that Evangelist Kang became worried, thinking, “Will something bad happen here?” Father and Evangelist Kang were sitting very close to each other. Father spoke

with tremendous force even while seated. When his speech reached its climax, he would occasionally shout at the top of his voice that it almost seemed as though Father was going to jump and run. Evangelist Kang listened to the sermon with her back against the wall. How much time had passed? It was around sunset when Father finally spoke.

“Let’s end the Word for today.”

As the conversation ended and before the prayer, Evangelist Kang attempted to leave the room. But Father grabbed the hem of her skirt and advised her to have dinner and then go home.

“No, I have a house very close by. I will go home.”

“You must have a meal here with me.”

It was an authoritative tone. When Evangelist Kang hesitated, Father pulled her clothing and made her sit down on the spot. And so Evangelist Kang decided to have a meal together. On the round pine table, there was only rationed barley rice, grilled tofu, and sour kimchi. She was amazed at the poverty of the meal.

At this moment, Father asked Evangelist Kang to offer a prayer before the meal. However, she had lost the will to pray because hearing the overwhelming Word of Father had made her lose confidence. So Father offered the prayer instead. Evangelist Kang was very surprised to hear Father’s prayer. This is because it was on a different dimension than the prayers she had normally offered. It was a sincere prayer with tears from Father, saying, “I will do this for you,” rather than the prayers she had spoken before, saying, “Please do this for me.”

When she stepped out of Father’s dugout hut, she felt as if

she had become a different person from her previous self. And it seemed like all the content of the theology she had learned in theological school had crumbled.

● Evangelist Kang Hyeonsil's Three-Day Experience of Hell

Afterwards, Evangelist Kang visited Father's hut multiple times to receive his teachings. There were times when she looked at the clock after Father's Word and realized it was past 4 a.m. Impressed by the Word, she started calling Father "Master."

One day, Father said to Evangelist Kang,

"You have heard many Words until now. Don't you want to know the sources of these teachings, whether they came from God or if they are something made up from a human's head?"

"Yes, I want to know. How can I find out?" she replied.

"Try praying. God will surely reveal it to you."

"Yes, I will try praying."

"Which of you, if your son asks for bread, will give him a stone? Or if he asks for a fish, will give him a snake? If you, then, though you are evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father in heaven give good gifts to those who ask him!"

After speaking Jesus' words from the New Testament, Father advised Evangelist Kang to pray and seek. She decided to start praying to find out the origin of Father's teachings. However, what came to her mind was what she had learned in theological school. She recalled the fact that many people could articulate impressive

theories, but few put them into practice.

She started to think that Father's teachings may also end up as mere theories that could not be put into practice. As she thought in this way, however, she developed a headache and a painful sensation in her chest.

She tried to say the word "God" but her tongue would not move, and her mouth would not open.

She had lost the ability to speak. The next three days felt like three long years.

She offered a prayer of repentance, saying, "Please forgive me for my sin of disbelief." Finally, as the headache and chest pain subsided, her ability to speak returned, and she could call out "God." After this experience, she went to visit Father.

"Why didn't you come for three days?" Father asked.

"For three days, I went to hell. For three days, I couldn't speak. My time was taken away, and my heart was wounded. I never experienced such a thing until I met you. Please compensate me."

At that moment, Father asked, "I want to ask you one thing, when you tried to pray, did you have doubts?"

"I did have doubts. I couldn't help it."

"Perhaps you couldn't speak because you doubted."

After saying that, Father left the hut by himself. At that time, Ok Sehyeon (who was fifty-three at the time) who was there approached and spoke to Evangelist Kang. She had met Father in Pyongyang in 1946 and had cut her own hair and woven it to make traditional Korean socks as an offering when Father was in

the Heungnam labor camp.

“That person is an amazing person. He is someone whom God loves.”

“I thought you were going to say something nice to me, but why do you only boast about Master? When and how did you meet the Master?”

“I received a revelation.”

“A revelation? What was it like?”

“I heard God’s voice.”

“Did you really hear it?”

“Yes, I did.”

“I have believed in Jesus for twenty-five years, but I have never heard the voice of God, not even once. I also want to hear it.”

As Ok Sehyeon continued her story, recalling the time when Father preached in Pyeongyang, she shed tears. Evangelist Kang, who had considered demanding compensation for the damages caused by experiencing three days in hell, realized that it was her own fault, not Father’s. After hearing Ms. Ok’s testimony, she was deeply impressed by the content of the story.

● The Wavering Heart of Evangelist Kang Hyeonsil

However, Evangelist Kang Hyeonsil was still wavering. While the content of Father’s Word was admirable. The environment was such that she could not trust anything. The room, about the size of two tatami mats, leaked when it rained, and there were only two or

three people who participated in the service. When she listened to the words, she believed them, but after a little time passed, she couldn't believe them anymore. She was troubled when she thought that she could be saved if she went to the Presbyterian Church.

One day, on the way to visit Father, Evangelist Kang decided in her heart in front of a crooked pine tree, "today, I will not enter the room, and I will just say my farewell to Master Moon and go home." However, when she went there, Father was standing in front of the hut. When she tried to say goodbye, she couldn't even look up at Father's face because it was scary. With a face like an angry tiger, Father glared at Evangelist Kang. She hesitated whether to leave like this or say goodbye, but Father went into the room. Since she had come all this way, she decided to talk first and then leave. Father who sat silently, began the conversation:

"I have one question. Please answer honestly."

"Yes, please go ahead."

"What were you thinking today?"

"I wasn't thinking about anything in particular."

"No, you were thinking."

"I don't remember well."

"Young as you are, have you already forgotten? Didn't you think while turning the corner in front of the crooked pine tree, 'I won't walk this path any more. This will be the end.' You came here to say goodbye to me, didn't you?"

Evangelist Kang was surprised to hear Father say that. Father saw through her thoughts completely. That day, hearing Father speak, all her doubts were dispelled. However, as soon as

she returned home, doubts arose again.

One day, she visited Father to compare the theories she had learned at theological school with the teachings Father had talked about and engaged in a debate. Father's talks involved many numbers. So she questioned Father provocatively.

"Do we need numbers to believe in Jesus? 40 days, 40 years, 400 years, 4000 years. You interpret the Bible with this number 4, but I can't believe that God's providence is like that."

Suddenly, she had a headache and felt a tightness in her chest. Father looked at her and said,

"You look pale. Blood is coming out of your mouth, isn't it?"

She noticed that blood had stained her skirt. When Father supported her chin with his hand, the headache disappeared, the tightness in her chest went away, and the bleeding from her mouth stopped.

The next day, Evangelist Kang visited Father again. When she listened to the Word she was amazed, but seeing his tattered appearance, she felt a sense of disbelief in the difference between theory and reality. At that moment, Father placed the Bible in front of her.

"Open the Bible anywhere, please."

She obediently opened the Bible she had in her hand. "Read verse 31 there." It was Matthew 14:31.

"Immediately Jesus reached out his hand and caught him. 'You of little faith,' he said, 'why did you doubt?'"

At that moment, Father approached Evangelist Kang, took

her Bible, and said,

“This is not the word of a human, but God’s word. Jesus said, “you of little faith, why did you doubt?” And yet why are you still doubting?”

After rebuking Evangelist Kang like this, Father continued with the following Word: “Soon, Christianity will be unified under this ‘Principle.’”

“For the unification of Christianity, the church leaders must gather and hold a conference. How can such a shabby cave-like room in Busan of South Korea accomplish that?” Evangelist Kang inadvertently blurted out such a remark.

Upon hearing this, Father laughed and responded as follows:

“It may seem impossible now, but it will happen soon. The unification of Christianity is not the issue here. It will even extend to the unification of religions.”

Evangelist Kang was even more astonished. Father continued speaking:

“Not only religious unification, but also the time will come when all of humanity becomes one. In other words, everything in the spirit world and the earthly world will be unified under this ‘Principle.’”

“No matter how much I hear such words, I cannot believe them.”

“Because this is God’s Will, when the time comes, it will inevitably happen.”

Evangelist Kang gave a testimony that this kind of exchange took place between her and Father. Despite harboring doubts toward Father on numerous occasions, she ultimately decided to determine her own path through prayer. She set conditions for three days and fervently prayed, seeking an answer from God regarding whether this path was the desired one. One day while she was continuing her prayers, she received an answer from God.

“The path that I have been guiding and carrying out for 6,000 years (referring to the history of mankind according to the Bible) is undoubtedly this path.” She also received teachings that the person inheriting the mission of Jesus from 2,000 years ago was Master Moon. Upon hearing God’s answer, Evangelist Kang decided to follow Father. It was not a decision based on her own judgment, but rather obedience to God’s voice.

● Pastor Lee Yohan’s Conversion

On December 1, 1952, a pastor visited the hut in Beomnaetgol. He was Pastor Lee Yohan, who was thirty-seven years old at that time. He did not know Father’s face, address, or name. Pastor Lee was born in Seoncheon, North Pyeongan Province in 1916 and had moved south. He studied abroad in Japan in 1936 and entered the East Asia Theological School (merged with Japan Eastern Theological School in 1943) in 1941. Father also studied in Japan in 1941. During Pastor Lee’s second year in class, Pastor Lee asked a question during a systematic theology class. If Jesus’ death on the cross was God’s plan to save all people, he could not understand

why the act of Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve apostles, would be considered betraying Jesus and be sent to hell. He continued to ask difficult questions to other professors and caused some problems. This led to him being labeled as a troublemaker, and it was discovered that Pastor Lee was the only one who did not participate in Shinto shrine visits.

Pastor Lee later worked at military supply factories in Toyohashi (Aichi Prefecture) and Shinonoi (Nagano Prefecture). Even during this time, military police would visit and monitor him once a week because he was designated as a person who needed to be watched. Pastor Lee continued his study of the Bible, and after liberation, he returned to Korea and received various revelations.

Pastor Lee received a revelation that “the Lord will come to Korea. There is no need to worry. It’s not the time to worry just because established churches have fallen. The era of the providence centered on Protestantism has ended.” He also had a strange dream. In the dream, he was walking through the streets and saw special editions of newspapers being distributed. The headline of the special edition read, “The Lord Returns to Korea!” After having this dream, Pastor Lee started spending nights in prayer at the church. At one point, he had a dream where he walked alongside a prisoner wearing a laborer’s uniform in a prison, but he did not know who that person was.

Pastor Lee met Mrs. Ok Sehyeon at Mt. Samgak (Mt. Bugak) in Seoul, where many Christians gathered for prayer. Mrs. Ok Sehyeon told him about a young man who had been imprisoned in Pyeongyang due to opposition from the established churches. From

that point on, Pastor Lee became interested in that young man and resolved to meet him someday. After the outbreak of the Korean War, Pastor Lee went to the international market in Busan, where many refugees gathered, to search for the young man. He noticed an elderly gentleman who seemed to have come from North Korea, so he approached him and inquired. He learned that the elderly gentleman had come from Pyeongyang and asked if he knew of a young man who was sent from Pyongyang to Heungnam labor camp. That elderly gentleman turned out to be none other than Mrs. Ok Sehyeon's husband. Since he opposed his wife following Master Moon, he cautioned Pastor Lee to never go to Beomil-dong where the young man was.

Pastor Lee discovered from the elderly gentleman that the young man he was searching for was in Beomil-dong, Busan, so he headed there. He knocked on the gate of a house that had no nameplate and did not know whose house it was. When the door opened, there was a young man sitting inside. It was Father.

At that moment, as soon as Father saw Pastor Lee Yohan, he said, "I knew Mr. Lee would come." Pastor Lee felt a sense of awe-inspiring dignity when he saw Father. Father also appeared as if he were a sports athlete. It was their first meeting, yet it felt as if they had known each other for a long time, creating a sense of intimacy like that of brothers. However, despite this, Pastor Lee still found it difficult to approach Father and initiate a conversation.

Pastor Lee had met many renowned pastors, but Father was filled with a dignity that surpassed them all. Father asked Pastor Lee, "Was there an incident when you were twenty-six years old?"

Pastor Lee had been expelled from the Japanese theological school at the age of twenty-six for refusing to participate in Shinto shrine worship. After hearing what happened, Father said, “Since Pastor Lee’s name is registered in the Book of Life, you have been guided by God to come here.” From that day, their life together began.

According to Pastor Lee, Father would spend all the money he received on the same day. Father knew who would come, saying things like, “Today, so-and-so will come. Let’s have galbi (barbecued ribs) today,” and he would prepare meals and wait for them. Most of the people who visited Father at that time were refugees. When someone arrived hungry, Father would feed them until they were full, and when a poor person came, he would give them all the money he had. Thus, Father didn’t have a single penny in his possession. Father didn’t save money but instead gave all his money to anyone he felt concerned about. He would buy used clothes or cheap clothes for those who followed him, but for new arrivals, he would buy nice clothes. He saved money for those who stayed with him but spent a lot of money on guests. According to Pastor Lee’s testimony, Father’s use of money remained the same even afterwards.

● Elder Lee Bongun’s Family Joins the Church and the Enlargement of the Sujeong-dong Church Building

Elder Lee Bongun (李鳳雲: 1906–1982) was born in 1906 in Sincheon-eup, Hwanghae Province, as the second son of devout Christian parents, Elder Lee Seungho and Ms. Kang Seungsun. At the age of nineteen, in 1924, he married Ms. Park Jeongjin (1905–

1992). At the age of twenty-one, he enrolled in the Commerce Department of Yeonhui Vocational School (Yeonhui Jeonmun Hakgyo) in Seoul and completed his studies. After finishing his academic pursuits, he engaged in various businesses and his family business in his hometown, while also dedicating himself to serving the church and faith.

During this time, due to the communist influence in North Korea, he had had to part from his parents and relatives. On March 1, 1948, his immediate family of eleven members began their journey south. Despite being on the verge of death many times, they finally arrived at Seoul Station on March 20. They settled in Gyobuk-dong in Seodaemun, Seoul and started services in their own home. With the help of Professor Won Hangyeong, a former professor at Yeonhui Vocational School, they established the Seodaemun Presbyterian Church, which has now become a large church. However, when the congregation grew to about 100 people, the Korean War broke out on June 25, 1950. Once again, they evacuated with six family members and moved to Suwon, Jeonju, Suncheon, Masan, and Busan, finally arriving on Jeju Island on March 20, 1951.

While living with refugees on Jeju Island, centered on their faith, they met Pastor Lee Yohan. They connected on matters of faith, and after Pastor Lee went to Busan and met Father, they began exchanging letters. When Pastor Lee reported about Elder Lee Bongun to Father, he sent a letter along with a partial description and simple explanation of the forty-day course of Adam, Noah, and Abraham, as part of Father's teachings in the Completed Testament Bible.

After receiving this letter, the entire family engaged in a unison prayer, they received an answer from Heaven saying, “Leave quickly.” On April 11, 1953, they left their residence in Beophwan-ri, Seogwi-po and arrived in Jeju-eup, where they boarded a ship to Busan, finally arriving on April 14, 1953. On that day, the family (Elder Lee Bongun, forty-eight years old; Park Jeongjin, forty-nine years old; Sugyeong, twenty years old; Mungyeong, sixteen years old; Mogyeong, thirteen years old; and Hyeongyeong, seven years old) visited Father’s residence at 437, Sujeong 5-dong, Dong-gu, Busan. It was their first meeting. A few days later, their eldest son, Lee Seongyeong, and eldest daughter, Lee Jugyeong, who were living separately, also came to visit, greeted Father, and joined the church. In this way, the entire family of Elder Lee, who had fled together from North Korea, became Father’s disciples. Father rejoiced, comparing their family’s conversion to “Noah’s family entering the ark.”

Father, who used to live in a small dugout hut in Beom-ildong, moved into the first rented house in January 1953 in Sujeong-dong and then moved to the second rented house in February. In March, Father purchased the third house in Sujeong-dong and relocated. That was the 437, Sujeong-dong house. About a month later, Elder Lee Bongun’s family of six joined. However, considering the number of followers, the house was too small.

After some time, Elder Lee Bongun suggested to Father that they should extend the house, and Father gladly agreed. For forty days, Elder Lee Bongun and Lee Sugyeong, designed the blueprint

and dedicated themselves to the expansion work, even taking on the role of carpenters. As a result, they created an additional room for Father's study and a space for gatherings. They also added a toilet, a fence, and a gate. To commemorate the completion of the expansion, they held a singing competition, which also served as an inaugural ceremony. The exact date is not accurately recorded, but it was probably around mid-July 1953.

(The above information is based on Elder Lee Bongun's autobiography, *Jij okja sangnak* (知足者常樂: Knowing Contentment and Always Being Cheerful) published by Seonghwa Publishing)

● The Reason Father Wrote Holy Song Number 5, “The Garden of Restoration” (English Holy Song Number 4)

True Father purchased the third house in Sujeong-dong and used it as a church. It was in this church that he wrote the lyrics for the Korean Holy Song number 5, “The Garden of Restoration” (English Holy Song number 4). This is because this was the first church that Father acquired as God's possession since the beginning of Father's providence of restoration. Due to the fall of the human ancestors, all humanity became descendants of Satan, and all possessions belonging to fallen humanity also fell under Satan's ownership. Therefore, God stood in a position of having no children or any possessions. God's providence of restoration is to send the Messiah who is God's son to this earth, and through the Messiah restore human beings and all things back under God's ownership. That is the providence of salvation, therefore the Messiah must fulfil that

work as well

By achieving victory in the providence in North Korea, Father was able to establish all the conditions necessary to depart from Pyeongyang as the Second Advent of the Messiah, following in the footsteps of Jesus. Therefore, what Father purchased came directly under God's ownership. In other words, by acquiring the Sujeong-dong church, it became God's property and home. It was in this Sujeong-dong church that the Holy Song, "The Garden of Restoration" was composed. The lyrics for this Holy Song were written in March 1953.

● The Reason Father Wrote Holy Song Number 6, "Grace of the Holy Garden" (English Holy Song Number 2)

By acquiring the Sujeong-dong church, Father stood in the position of having attained the "Garden of Restoration," and so he wrote the Korean Holy Song number 5, "The Garden of Restoration." It is a principle that when a church's public land or buildings are established, a dedication ceremony is conducted to offer them to God.

However, the house in Sujeong-dong was built and lived in by fallen human beings, and the building was in a state of having many old parts and lacked necessary things. Therefore, it was not possible to dedicate it to God as it was.

As a result, Father completely repaired the house, adding new rooms, and building new gates and fences, thus transforming it into a new house. Afterwards, Father established the condition that

this was a newly built house and performed the dedication ceremony to offer it to God.

In this way, although the church was small, by establishing the conditions for God to be able to visit His own place, it became a small region resembling the Garden of Eden before the Fall. It became a place with the meaning of “Seong-won” in Korean, meaning “Holy Garden” or “Garden of Eden.” All of this was bestowed as a grace from God. Therefore, it was possible to write the Holy Song “Grace of the Holy Garden,” expressing gratitude for the grace of the holy garden. The lyrics for this Holy Song were written in July 1953.

That is why in the restored Garden of Eden in Cheongpyeong as well, the Korean Holy Song number 6, “Grace of the Holy Garden,” is frequently sung.

● The First Forty-Day Pioneering Evangelism in Daegu

This is a story from the time when Father was at the third Sujeong-dong church in Busan. One day, he called Evangelist Kang and said to her,

“Why don’t you go on a pioneering mission?”

Kang asked, “Where should I go?”

True Father replied, “Pyongyang is the area where Christianity has the largest influence in North Korea, and in South Korea, it is Daegu. So, starting from July 20, you should go on a pioneering mission in Daegu.”

Father continued to speak to Evangelist Kang, saying,

“I don’t want to send you into a world full of wolves, the realm of Satan. However, my heart is truly lonely and sad because it still must be done regardless. When you go on a pioneering mission, various problems will arise. You are still young, so you will face various trials. But every time you face those severe trials, never forget that God is always behind you.”

Evangelist Kang took a few days to prepare her heart for departure. Although she had experience in street witnessing and house-to-house witnessing, pioneering mission work was something new to her. When Kang informed an acquaintance of her plan to embark on a pioneering mission, her friend, who was a woman brought her two sets of clothes. However, later on, she couldn’t find one of the outfits. It turned out that Father had hidden one set of clothes.

It is recorded in the Bible that 2,000 years ago, when Jesus sent his disciples on a mission, he said the following:

“Do not get any gold or silver or copper to take with you in your belts—no bag for the journey or extra shirt or sandals or a staff” (Matthew 10:9-10).

Like Jesus 2,000 years ago, True Father also followed this practice. The day of departure finally arrived. Father called Evangelist Kang into his room and said, “Pioneering mission work is not something easy. You must be motivated by God in everything you do and throw yourself away for the sake of the mission.”

After saying this, Father offered a prayer for Evangelist Kang:

“I am sending this young daughter into the frontlines of

Satan's world. God, please have mercy on her and intervene in everything, from the smallest matters to the most important ones. Without God, there is nothing she can do. Please be with her."

Father's prayer was filled with a voice that seemed on the verge of tears, resonating from the depths of his heart. Upon hearing this prayer, her determination became firm. It had only been a year and two months since she had first met Father. She knew that she knew nothing and couldn't even give lectures. However, seeing how passionately Father was dedicated to the way of evangelism to recover the eternal life of humanity, she felt that she also had to witness.

On July 20, 1953, Evangelist Kang set off early in the morning. She had moved from a hut in Beomnaetgol to Sujeong-dong in January of that year, but this departure was from the third Sujeong-dong church. Without carrying any bags, she had a single set of clothes, a Bible, and a handwritten copy of the "Original Divine Principle" wrapped in a white cloth. She bid farewell to Father and at that moment, he said to her:

"Do your best and make sure to build a church in Daegu before you return. You must not come back before the fortieth day. Even if you were to return on the thirty-ninth day, I cannot let you enter the church. I would have to chase you away and have no relationship with you."

Upon hearing these words, she felt that she was in a fearful place. As she left the church and descended the slope, she turned back and saw Father placing his hand on the fence, watching her. Evangelist Kang testified about this moment, saying:

“At that time, Father had an expression that seemed on the verge of tears, an expression of helplessness as he looked at me. Seeing that face, my heart changed. I realized that I am an inadequate human being, but I thought about the heart of Father, who had such high expectations for me and wished for my victory. I wanted to offer a result that could meet Father’s expectations, so I renewed my determination.”

She waved her hand to Father and headed for Busan Station. The money given to her by Father was barely enough for transportation and could buy a one-doe (1.8-liter) sack of rice. When Evangelist Kang arrived in Daegu, seeing many churches and people coming and going, she became unsure of what to do.

She stood there quietly and prayed to God in her heart, saying:

“I don’t know where to go. There are many churches and people here, but what should I do? It is truly a difficult path.”

At that moment, she heard a voice in her ear:

“Hyeonsil! Hyeonsil! Hyeonsil! Are you saying that you have a difficult time after just one year? I have tirelessly walked for 6,000 long years without a single day of rest to save the lives of fallen mankind. Are you saying one year is difficult?”

Evangelist Kang asked God what she should do.

“I will give you courage. So have faith and build a church here in Daegu. I will help you.”

“Thank you, God. Since you said you would assist me, I can have courage and build a church here.”

And so, Evangelist Kang's forty-day pioneering mission began. In mid-August, one month later, because of Father's revelation, Pastor Lee Yohan was sent to Daegu to build a church on the foundation Evangelist Kang had laid.

As a result, they were able to build a church in Daegu. However, after that, the church had to move several times. There were instances where they moved twice in a day and even thirteen to fourteen times a month. This was because they were labeled as heretics by the established churches, and as the number of people drawn to Father's teachings grew significantly, it even became a problem within families.

By July 20, 1957, four years later, the pioneering mission that Evangelist Kang first conducted in Daegu had expanded to 120 locations across South Korea.

● President Eu Hyowon Joins the Church

On July 20, 1953, Father sent Evangelist Kang to Daegu, and the number of followers in Busan gradually began to increase. At that time, a person visited the church in Busan's Sujeong-dong. His name was Mr. Eu Hyowon (劉孝元: 1914-1970). He later became the first president of the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity (Unification Church) and wrote the *Explanation of the Divine Principle* (published on August 15, 1957) and *Exposition of the Divine Principle* (published on May 1, 1966) under Father's guidance. His importance is well-known to early members of the Unification Church.

Let me briefly introduce who President Eu Hyowon was. President Eu was born in 1914, the second son of a family with three siblings, in Jeongju, North Pyeongan Province, just like Father. President Eu's grandfather converted to Christianity and was such a devoted believer that he would walk twenty kilometers to attend services in Seoncheon, North Pyeongan Province. Later, his grandfather built a church and a primary school in his hometown, dedicating himself to education. In other words, President Eu came from a family of Christians spanning three generations.

When President Eu's mother was pregnant with him, she prayed fervently, hoping that he would become a person who could be used in God's kingdom. President Eu graduated from Osan High School in his hometown in 1933. He excelled in mathematics, and none of the teachers at his school could compete with him. He was the only one among the school's graduates who passed the entrance exam for Gyeongseong Imperial University (now Seoul National University), majoring in mathematics and achieving a perfect score in the entrance exam.

It is said that many families in the North Pyeongan Province area, upon learning this, proposed marriage to him. He entered the medical school of the university, but his true desire was to study political science and become an opera singer. However, in April 1939, he had to drop out of the university due to an illness (hip joint caries). This marked the beginning of a long battle with illness. He attempted suicide several times, but his mother always prayed by his side. The family's prayers were dedicated to the independence of their homeland and President Eu's recovery from

illness. During his battle with illness, President Eu devoted himself to studying the Bible. He was so passionate about seeking the truth that he even learned the original languages to gain a deeper understanding of the Bible. However, the more he read the Bible, the more questions and contradictions he encountered in its interpretation.

The opportunity for him to meet Father came through his relative, Ms. Yang Yunsin. She was the sister of Ms. Yang Yunyeong, a music lecturer at Ewha Womans University, who would later be witnessed to. One day, sister Yang asked a church member for a favor.

“I have a relative who is deeply faithful. He is currently bedridden due to illness, but he is very dedicated to studying the Bible. Could you please visit him?”

In response to this request, two women visited President Eu Hyowon on Busan’s Yeongdo Island, guided by Ms. Yang. However, they couldn’t engage in a dialogue that would convince the logical President Eu. Later, Mr. Kim Wonpil also visited and explained Father’s teachings. At that time, Mr. Kim was twenty-six years old, while President Eu was forty. Even Mr. Kim, who had walked with Father, couldn’t provide an explanation of the teachings that would convince President Eu. Afterward, President Eu directly visited the Sujeong-dong Church.

There, he borrowed the “Original Divine Principle” written by Father and read it multiple times, eventually even transcribing it. Reading and transcribing the “Original Divine Principle” was a continuous experience of inspiration and admiration. On December

10, 1953, he wrote a letter to Father.

The letter expressed how moved he was upon realizing the value of human existence and understanding his own existence. It was written that he exclaimed many times that the “Original Divine Principle” is the “final testament to mankind.” The letter concluded with the words expressing his hope for the glorious day when he would offer himself.

Upon reading President Eu’s letter and being moved by it, Father visited Busan from Seoul on December 23 of that year. At that time, Father’s state of mind was as follows:

“As I crossed the Yeongdo Bridge in Busan, I was deeply serious. Many people had made vows and followed me before, but they all eventually left. Will this person (Eu Hyowon) remain steadfast and continue to follow until the end?”

From December 24 for a period of twenty-one days, Father held a special gathering at the home of Mr. Shin Seongmok in Yeongdo. Father started giving lectures, beginning with the topic of John the Baptist not being able to fulfill his responsibility. The number of participants was less than ten. More than half of them were relatives of President Eu, but Ms. Kim Inju, who had been witnessed to in Pyongyang, was also there.

During this time, Father continued to speak tirelessly, forgetting about sleep and meals. Except for minimal sleep time, meals, and restroom breaks, it was lectures, prayers, praises, and testimonies of faith, one after the other. It is said that even when President Eu needed to use the restroom, he ran there and back, determined not to miss a single Word spoken by Father. To an

outsider, it must have appeared a strange sight.

6) Founding of the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity

On May 1, 1954, Father founded the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity (HSA-UWC) in a rented house in Bukhak-dong, Seongdong-gu, Seoul. Although the name includes the words “Unification of World Christianity” in it, the church at that time was small and cramped, and visitors were surprised by its shabby appearance. The entrance was narrow and low, requiring taller individuals to lower their heads to avoid hitting it. Father provided the following interpretation for this entrance:

“Only the humble can pass through this entrance.”

Because you had to pass through these low entrances three times, it came to be known by the alternative name of the “Sedaemun Church” (meaning “Church of Three Great Gates”). Inside the small room, there was only one hanging lightbulb, and there was no blackboard for giving lectures.

Father did not intend to establish a new church like this. That is because God’s hope was to unify Christianity, unify religions, and build a world where all mankind becomes one family under God. That is why Father made efforts to unify Christianity. However, because Father faced opposition from Christian churches and persecution as a heretical group, Father had no choice but to establish a new church. If you were to ask Jesus Christ, the founder

of Christianity, “Did you want there to be numerous Christian denominations as there are now?” how would Jesus answer?

Jesus would never respond by saying, “I hope Christianity divides into hundreds, thousands, or tens of thousands of denominations.” It must be one and it must become one. Thus, the movement to become one has continued until now. However, the reality is not so simple.

According to Father’s teachings, because of the Fall of the human ancestors and their separation from God, religions have come about as God’s means to bring mankind back to its original state before the fall. Therefore, once human beings reach perfection and return to the original world, religions will no longer be necessary. Hence, the purpose of the Unification Church is to realize a world where religion is no longer needed.

In this way, Father’s goal is to build an ideal world where mankind becomes one global family centering on God, where there is no need for salvation, a savior, or prayers of repentance.

When the Unification Church was founded in Seoul, it faced intense persecution. The inclusion of the words “Unification of World Christianity” in the name spurred the persecution. If the words “Christianity” and “Unification” had been removed from the name on the signboard, the established churches might not have persecuted us to the extent that they have. Some people even suggested to Father, “What if we remove those words?” However, Father never removed those words. He believed that those words were indispensable, even if they caused further persecution. The criticism and persecution from other churches were not a concern

for Father.

For Father, the issue is not about persecution by the country or the world. It is about building the kingdom of God (heaven) on earth, which Jesus was unable to accomplish. That is everything to Father. God's providence cannot be fulfilled through convenient means or easy methods. It can only be realized through fair and open battles, leading to victory.

As I mentioned at the beginning of this book, the most important part of True Father's life course is the second stage. With this, I would like to conclude the second stage. Starting from the liberation of Korea on August 15, 1945, Father carried out the providence to unify Christianity in Korea but was not successful. By God's command, he went through a providence of suffering in North Korea and achieved victory before returning to South Korea. The period of eight years, eight months, and sixteen days from the foundation of the providence in Busan, through Daegu, to the establishment of the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity (HSA-UWC) in Seoul on May 1, 1954, marks the beginning of Father's public life course as the Lord of the Second Advent. It is because of Father living a life course of putting his life on the line that we have come to where we are today.

■ Chart of True Father's Heavenly Providential Course (天路歷程)

1st Stage Course	February 25, 1920 6 th Day of the 1 st Lunar Month, 1920	Birth of True Father
		15 years, 1 month, and 23 days
	April 17, 1935	Received Revelation
		10 years, 3 months, 29 days
2nd Stage Course	August 15, 1945	Begins the Providence
		8 years, 8 months, 16 days
3rd Stage Course	May 1, 1954	Founding of the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity (HSA-UWC)
		5 years, 11 months, 10 days
4th Stage Course	April 11, 1960	True Parents' Holy Marriage Blessing Ceremony
		40 years, 9 months, 2 days (Main Providential Period)
5th Stage Course	January 13, 2001	Coronation Ceremony of the Kingship of God
		5 years, 5 months
6th Stage Course	June 13, 2006	Entrance to the Cheonjeong Palace and True Parents' Coronation Ceremony of the King of Cosmic Peace
		6 years, 2 months, 20 days
	September 3, 2012 Heavenly Calendar: July 17, 2012	True Father's Ascension (Seonghwa) Day
		4 months, 10 days
	January 13, 2013	Foundation Day

2. Principled Definition of God

Faithful believers living in the present day must accurately understand the definition of God. If the definition of God is incorrect, everything will go in the wrong direction. Not only will religion be affected, but social order will also be disrupted. Therefore, it is only by accurately answering the questions “Who is God and what kind of being is He?” that we can walk the proper path of faith.

God—the One and Only Father

God is absolute, unique, unchanging, eternal, and the masculine subject. He is the origin of all things and the omniscient, omnipotent Creator. The Bible states that God created angels as assistants in His task to create the heavens and the earth.

According to the aforementioned definition, God exists as the unique being, masculine subject, the origin of all things, and as the Creator. This means that every existing entity in the universe

was created by the one and only God.

According to the principles of God's government, in the original world, the head of the Kingdom of Heaven is God alone, as the masculine subject being. The head of a nation and the world are chosen by God from among masculine subject individuals who have achieved the four stages of filial child, patriot, saint, and divine child.

Due to the Fall of the human ancestors, this principle was not properly upheld. However, even in the fallen world, the heads of nations are generally individuals who are masculine subjects in nature. Father explained that this is because men possess the seed of life.

Naturally, the one who governs the universe is the omniscient, omnipotent Creator, God, who created and loves all beings in the cosmos and the created universe.

God is the masculine subject and also exists as the harmonious subject of dual characteristics. God is a unifying being centered on love in a harmonious position. (*Sermons of Sun Myung Moon*, volume 223, page 249. Volumes and pages henceforth will be indicated in the simplified format: 223-249)

In Korean, God is referred to as "Hananim," which means the one and only being. True Father said that you can even call God "the One and Only." Therefore, we see God with the attributes of being unique, absolute, unchanging, and eternal, and we use the title "King of Kings" to refer to God.

Why must the ruler of the universe be only one and not

two?

If a country has two kings or presidents, what would happen to that country? It would likely split into two nations or factions, leading to conflict, the breakdown of order, and chaos. In some cases, one of the parties will be defeated and destroyed while the victor will remain. In other cases, both may face destruction. Therefore, for a country to maintain order, peace, freedom, and prosperity, it must unite under the leadership of a single noble ruler.

Now, what would happen if both the husband and wife in a ruling couple become the subject? If the husband becomes the king and the wife becomes the queen, it is still similar to having two kings in one country. A couple according to the Principle of Creation is able to achieve a complementary relationship where they can become a couple of one mind, one body, one thought, and one harmony, if they are in a relationship of masculine subject and feminine object.

However, if both the husband and wife become subjects, conflicts would arise, and the family would be unable to reconcile. It will be impossible to achieve one mind, one body, one thought and one harmony. Therefore, it is crucially important to understand that in order to maintain peace and harmony within a family, the husband and wife cannot both assume the position of subject.

According to the Principle, God, who revealed Himself through the True Parents, exists as a being of dual characteristics. God is defined as “masculine-subject” and is referred to as “Father.”

God's object is the "feminine-object."

The term "Heavenly Parent" refers to both God and God's object together. It is not that both are God; rather, God is the "masculine-subject." Only this aspect is referred to as "God."

If both were considered God, there would be multiple gods, which is unacceptable. Therefore, it is essential to clearly understand that only the "masculine-subject" is God. Father often used the term "God's wife". Occasionally, Father also used the expression "Heavenly Mother."

The term "Hananim" (God) is not a common noun but a proper noun for God. It signifies the absolute unique position and authority of God, who is the supreme ruler over the universe, expanded to the cosmic level, and the one and only King of Kings. At the same time, it represents the unique name used to refer to God.

Therefore, this term should only be used for God and should not be used for any other existence. It is crucial to understand that it is an absolute term to be used only for God. In this context, suitable terms to represent the feminine-object of God could be "God's wife," "God's queen consort," or "Heavenly Mother."

Thus, it is essential to use the term "Heavenly Mother" instead of "Mother God" and understand that it is equivalent to the expression "God's wife" representing the feminine-object aspect of God. For human beings created as children, the concept of "Heavenly Mother" is established in this sense.

Therefore, in this context, it should not be misunderstood that God is both the "Father God" and the "Mother God", as two

people. Hence, it is more appropriate to use the expression “Heavenly Mother” instead of “Mother God.” This term represents the feminine-object of “the masculine-subject God” within the dual characteristics of God, specifically the feminine aspect of the God who exists as the masculine subject. It is equivalent to the expression “God’s wife” or “God’s spouse.” For human beings, created as sons and daughters, the concept of “Heavenly Mother” holds this very meaning.

Let me quote directly from Father’s Words to further clarify this concept:

God is the harmonious subject of dual characteristics, and in terms of character (*gyeok* 格), God possesses the masculine nature. The male represents a relative character in relation to God’s fatherly love, creating a ninety-degree relationship. On the other hand, the female is not in a ninety-degree relationship. What is a female? She exists in a horizontal relationship that reciprocates with the male that exists in a ninety-degree relationship with God. When we look at these characters centering on God’s personality, the male represents the top-down relationship which is the vertical relationship, while the female represents the right-left relationship which is the horizontal relationship. So, which comes first, the vertical or the horizontal? Because the vertical takes precedence, the path pursued and sought after by the principles of

nature is to come closer to the preceding position. That is why, when it is centering on God's love, it is the son more than the daughter. Everything can be organized when we understand it in this way. (*Sermons of Sun Myung Moon*, 177-302)

This statement clearly reveals the relationship between the dual characteristics within God and the order in the principle of creation through the relationship between Adam (male) and Eve (female), who were created to resemble God's form. The male stands as the object partner of the God the Father in a ninety-degree relationship, or vertical relationship, while the female, stands as the object partner of the male in a horizontal relationship, or "right-left" relationship. The apostle Paul's words in his First Epistle to the Corinthians 11:7, "For a man ought not to have his head covered, since he is the image and glory of God; but the woman is the glory of man," can also be understood from this perspective based on the Principle of Creation.

Only One Person Is the Supreme Decision Maker

When we consider a nation, there is only one king. The queen consort is the king's wife and shares in his authority. However, even if the queen consort is the king's partner, the king can still punish or change her if she commits a crime. This can be observed throughout the history of both Eastern and Western

dynasties that have appeared and disappeared. When we refer to the king and queen as the parents of the nation, it is not to refer to them as two people as the king and queen but rather to show respect and reverence towards them as the king and his wife.

In the fallen world where Satan became the ruler, it was not uncommon to have queens. However, in the original world, there is no queen. Presently, there may be a queen in countries like the United Kingdom, and there have been queens in the history of Korea, but this is not part of God's system. According to God's system, men become kings. The imperial system in Japan is one example of this.

The position of a president who governs a nation can be viewed in a similar way. The first lady holds her own authority as the first lady, but the president remains a singular figure, and the first lady is the president's wife, not a female president herself.

God and the Messiah, as well as kings and presidents, must all have a wife. Therefore, we have God and God's wife, the Messiah and the Messiah's wife, the king and the queen consort, or the president and the first lady.

What we must clearly understand is that the ultimate decision-maker in the cosmos, the world, and a nation is solely God, the Messiah, the king, or the president. The wife of God, the wife of the Messiah, the queen consort, or the first lady are not the ultimate decision makers. There must be only one ultimate decision-maker.

In the family, God is the father. When the Messiah, the king, or the president go home they are a father. This is the case

because the family is a place centering on love. However, the cosmos, the world, and a nation are governed by principles and laws, with order at the center, so there must be only a single ultimate ruler.

Just as there is a strict father and a loving mother, the terms “Parent of Heaven,” “Parent of the World,” and “Parent of the Nation” appear when the cosmos, world and nation must be ruled with a parent’s heart. However, this word appears only when we view the cosmos, world and nation as one big family, but it does not mean that the two will both be rulers at the highest level.

In light of these considerations, we must reconsider the meaning of the calligraphy that was written by True Father (Rev. Sun Myung Moon) in conjunction with the Cheon Jeong Gung Entrance Ceremony on June 13, 2006 as follows:

“천일국진성덕황제(天一國眞聖德皇帝)” - The Cosmic Heavenly Nation’s True Holy Virtuous Sovereign Emperor

“억조창생만승군황(億兆蒼生萬勝君皇)” - The Countless Living Beings’ Absolute Victorious and Royal Sovereign King

“태평성대만사형통(太平聖代萬事亨通)” - All things Will Advance and Prosper in the Holy Eras of Great Peace

We Blessed Families must clearly understand that this content, which was announced to the cosmos together with the Cheon Jeong Gung Entrance Ceremony, is True Father’s historic calligraphy. Who is this “True Holy Virtuous Sovereign Emperor”

and “Absolute Victorious and Royal Sovereign King” referring to? This is not even in question. Father alone is the “True Holy Virtuous Sovereign Emperor” and the “Absolute Victorious and Royal Sovereign King.” We must understand this clearly. Similarly, in the case of God, God is the “King of Kings,” the one and only God, and the Father God.

The same Principle applies. God is the harmonious subject of dual characteristics, but also He manifests Himself as the masculine subject, and the other aspect, the feminine object, is “God’s wife.” We must not confuse this understanding.

However, there are people who misunderstand this and have even created the concept of a “Mother God” and claim that women (daughters) can succeed Father. This truly demonstrates a lack of understanding. It is important to know that True Father made efforts to correct such misunderstandings.

In addition to that, there have been voices suggesting that the *Exposition of the Divine Principle* should be rewritten because it is centered on men. They cleverly talk about gender equality. Worried about such issues, Father strongly instructed that not a single word should be changed because the *Exposition of the Divine Principle* is Scripture that contains the Word regarding God’s Principle. It is truly unconscionable and regrettable that there are people who speak differently from True Father’s strict teachings.

The fallen sinful world has twisted this relationship, in other words the order of creation of God’s sons and daughters and the relationship of love. From male dominance and discrimination

against women to women's liberation, feminism, gender equality, and same-sex relationships, the key to saving the fallen world under Satan's dominion lies in restoring these distorted male-female relationships according to the original order of creation. The records and accounts in the Bible, which reveal God's providence of salvation, is a message to teach humanity about the important process of restoring the original order and relationships. However, the complete answer is the providence of the Blessed Families that True Father has initiated.

The Messiah Comes as One Person

The Messiah is also the same. There is only one person who comes as the Messiah with the mission to be God's substantial representative. However, the Messiah also needs to have a wife. However, she is "the Messiah's wife" and not the Messiah herself. This must be clearly understood. The Messiah refers specifically to the individual who comes as the representative of God and as the "masculine subject" resembling God. I reiterate, there is only one Messiah, not two.

True Mother, when referred to as "True Parents," corresponds to the position of "the Messiah's wife," not the Messiah herself. While True Father is not physically present, True Mother maintains that position on his behalf. However, it is essential to understand that Mother is not the Messiah. The term "True Parents" encompasses both the Messiah and the Messiah's wife, but it does

not mean a male Messiah and a female Messiah.

I will reiterate about the Messiah:

The Messiah comes as the perfected Adam representing God, selects a bride from fallen women, restores her to the position of a woman without original sin, who stands in the position of the Messiah's wife, then being able to stand in the position of True Parents. God sends the perfected man as the Messiah, restores the "fallen Eve" as the "Eve without the original sin," thus having her stand in the position of an original Eve.

Then God has her receive the Blessing as a couple together with the Messiah to become the True Parents. It is the prerogative of the Messiah to restore the fallen Eve and place her in the position of the unfallen Eve, and through the Blessing, become True Parents.

Therefore, the authority to liquidate the original sin lies solely with the Messiah.

The prophecy of the Second Coming of the Messiah was not found in the scriptures before the arrival of Jesus. In other words, God did not give a prophecy stating that if Jesus were to fail, He would send a returning Lord to take on the responsibility.

So why didn't God give such a prophecy? In order for God to give a prophecy, He must find a prophet on Earth who is aligned with His will. This in itself is a difficult task, and even if such a prophet is found and gives the prophecy, it would be challenging and burdensome for the leaders of Judaism to accept and include the prophecy in the scriptures.

Furthermore, making such a prophecy would imply that

Jesus, as the First Coming, would fail to fulfill his responsibility and die. Therefore, such a prophecy could not be made. Moreover, God knows that there is no person on Earth, including any prophet or leader, like Jesus that He can believe in. So God considered it best that if a serious situation arose for Jesus, he would directly prophesy about it himself, and thus Jesus himself was given the prophecy of his Second Coming.

The Meaning of Father's Marriage with Ms. Choe Seongil

This was the same for Father as well. God considered it best to create a successor through the most trustworthy True Father, so True Father was able to have a son through his holy marriage with Mr. Choe Seongil.

Father's course to North Korea was not because Father's marriage with Ms. Choe Seongil was considered a Fall that had to be restored through this indemnity condition. The purpose of the course to North Korea was to conduct the providence of unity with Christianity in North Korea in order to restore through indemnity the failure of the providence for the unity with Christianity in South Korea. As we have studied in the course of the providence of restoration, Father walked the course to restore through indemnity the failure in South Korea through establishing a "greater indemnity condition."

True Father's marriage to Ms. Choe Seongil was done based on God's instruction. If Father had married without God's

instruction, then this would have been the same as the fallen Adam. If Father had married Ms. Choe Seongil according to his own will, it would have been a fallen act like the fall of Adam, and Father could not be the Messiah. It is crucial for Blessed Families to clearly understand that Father's marriage to Ms. Choe Seongil was carried out according to God's Will.

I will explain based on the Principle regarding the marriage of Father and Ms. Choe Seongil. There are two important meanings to consider.

First, it was carried out based on the standard of perfection. We have learned in the Principle that there is the formation stage, growth stage, and completion stage. However, perfection is not achieved simply by passing through the period of three stages. While setting the standard for individual perfection is possible through the three ordered stages, without bearing the fruit of love, it cannot be said to be complete perfection.

Therefore, even if Adam and Eve achieved individual perfection, that by itself cannot be said to be perfection. They must marry and perfect conjugal love. So how is perfection achieved? Once a man or a woman has achieved perfection as an individual, they will receive God's blessing to become a couple. When the couple becomes one through horizontal love, the vertical love of God will dwell with them, and the three parties of God, husband, and wife become completely one through God's love. This is how one is able to become a complete perfect human being and become a son or daughter

who can receive and embody God's complete love. In Korean tradition, regardless of age, a person was not considered a full-fledged adult if they were not married. This tradition originated from the reasons mentioned above.

The question is why God arranged for Father to be married before the start of the providence, even though Father had already achieved individual perfection. During Jesus' time as well, God intended to arrange his marriage before the start of the providence, but the families of Zechariah and Mary did not fulfill their responsibilities, so God could not give the marriage. Marriage is necessary for perfection. To bear the fruit of love is marriage. For this reason, God arranged for Father and Ms. Choe Seongil to be married. This was done by God before the start of the providence and before the liberation to establish the standard of being a perfect Son of God and to embark on the providential mission.

The second reason relates to the issue that the Second Advent of the Messiah was not originally part of God's plan. It was because Jesus was unable to fulfill his mission due to the disbelief of the chosen people of Israel and passed away that the concept of the Second Advent emerged after Jesus.

Similarly, there was a possibility that True Father could have been persecuted and even killed by going to North Korea, which was under a communist regime. In the Bible, there is no record stating that if the Lord of the Second Advent cannot fulfill his mission and passes away, another Lord of the Second Advent

will be sent.

In the case of Jesus' First Coming, Jesus himself said that he would return if he failed. However, in the case of Father, who came as the Lord of the Second Advent, he had to stand in the position of establishing his own successor. That is why he had a son with Ms. Choe Seongil. Before going to North Korea, Father named his son "Seongjin" (聖進).

The reason for this name was that in the event something were to happen to Father, his son would carry on the Will and advance it. In case of something happening, the name Seongjin, meaning "holiness advances," was given to prepare a successor. However, True Father overcame many sufferings and hardships in the course of indemnity in North Korea under communist rule and ultimately achieved victory. Father then returned to South Korea, the "Land of Freedom." Since then, the need for the succession providence of Seongjin became unnecessary.

To summarize the two meanings behind True Father's marriage to Ms. Choe Seongil: first, it was to establish the True Father as the sole perfected Adam in substance and in name, and second, to prepare a successor for a time of urgent necessity.

When True Father went to North Korea, he did not look back or inform anyone. Despite having a wife and child, he went out to procure rice for his journey and headed straight to North Korea.

True Father is a person who must immediately put into action any revelation received from God. Father's motto in life was

to become the greatest filial child before God. That is why he walked such a difficult path. Becoming the greatest filial child in history was the standard and motto of True Father's life.

The Essential Requirement for the Course of the Lord of the Second Advent Is the Discovery and Elucidation of the Principle

Father was victorious in Heungnam labor camp in North Korea and arrived in Busan on January 27, 1951. Amidst the horrific war, on May 11, 1951, in Goejeong-dong, Busan, at the home of disciple Kim Wondeok, who had also been imprisoned in Heungnam labor camp, Father began writing the "Original Divine Principle". One year later, on May 10, 1952, Father completed the writing at the mud house in Beomnaetgol.

After the restoration through indemnity of Jesus' thirty-three-year life course, the essential condition for embarking on the course as the Lord of the Second Advent, was the discovery and proclamation of the Principle. With the proclamation of the Principle, Father began evangelical work, and on May 1, 1954, the "Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity" was founded. After the completion of Father's forty-year course of indemnity, the Holy Marriage of True Parents was held on April 11, 1960 (16th day of the 3rd lunar month).

Father began his discovery of the Principle on April 17, 1935 (at the age of sixteen), Easter morning, when he received a revelation from God to "inherit the mission that Jesus could not

fulfill.” Discovering the Principle was the most fundamental providence and more important than any other providence for the Messiah to fulfill, once the call had been received.

When was the entire content of the “Original Divine Principle” discovered? Father said that it took fourteen years to solve the single question of why God allowed the Fall of humankind and subsequently initiated the providence of salvation. This implies that it took fifteen years to discover and elucidate the Principle. Father began the providence of restoration from August 15, 1945, and conducted the providence for unity with Christianity in South Korea, but that ended in failure. Therefore, Father went to North Korea and started the providential work there on June 6, 1946. Father was released from Heungnam labor camp on October 14, 1950. In other words, from April 17, 1935, to October 14, 1950, within a span of fifteen years, Father discovered and elucidated the entire Principle.

It is crucial for blessed families to clearly understand that during this period, Father diligently searched for the Word of God’s truth and fulfilled all providential works based on this.

Blessed Families and brothers and sisters! Let us contemplate Father who searched for the Principle while enduring the suffering of imprisonment in Heungnam Labor Camp. In that place, where forty percent of prisoners died due to lack of proper food or rest, working under severe labor conditions. As an example, let’s look at the passage titled, “The Saint in Prison, Rev. Sun Myung Moon” from the memoir *The Road to Seoul: Moon Sun*

Myung by Mr. Kim Inho, who was imprisoned in Heungnam labor camp after Father but also managed to survive:

In the morning, as dawn broke, I got up to use the toilet and noticed a dark figure next to the toilet. Upon closer inspection, I realized it was Rev. Sun Myung Moon. While everyone else, exhausted, would collapse and fall asleep as soon as it was bedtime, Rev. Moon would sit there during that time and offer prayers.

Mr. Kim Inho recorded in his memoir that Rev. Moon became revered as a saint among the prisoners.

Think about how Father, amid this bloody battle against Satan, sacrificed his precious sleep time at night to engage in a life of prayer. What kind of prayers did Father offer? Despite the imminent threat of death in the prison, Father cut down on sleep to pray for the discovery of the Principle. Therefore, this prayer time, which ordinary people cannot even fathom, was the greatest time for Father to commune with God.

Is there any chance that impurities could have entered into the Principle that Father revealed through his life and death struggles? Therefore, as he subjugated Satan, Father discovered and elucidated the entire Principle. Therefore, one cannot recklessly alter the Principle, which has been revealed in this way, with self-centered and shortsighted thinking. Doing so would invite divine punishment. This period of discovering the Principle had to

be free from any personal thoughts. In a life and death struggle Father fulfilled his responsibility with one thought only, to search for the Word of God's truth.

Thus, this "Original Divine Principle" is the foundational manuscript of the *Divine Principle* that we study today.

The Messiah is the Original Adam without Original Sin

We must understand the Principle correctly. After the Fall of the human ancestors Adam and Eve, there were only fallen spiritual beings and fallen substantial human beings in heaven and on earth. In order for God to carry out the providence of salvation in this state, He had to create an original Adam who had no blood relationship with fallen humanity. This Adam would have had no original sin, no evil mind, no hereditary sin, or fallen nature. Therefore, this Adam had to be completely unrelated to Satan.

However, this Adam had to be born in the position of having fallen human beings as his parents because there were only fallen human beings on this earth.

Is it possible to give birth to a person who has no original sin, no sin, no evil, and no fallen nature while having fallen human beings as their parents? Theoretically, it seems impossible. However, this was the position of God, who had to complete the providence of salvation.

Therefore, even God, who created this vast and boundless universe with His omniscience and omnipotence, took more than

60,000 years and required the blood and flesh of many people who appeared throughout the history of the providence of restoration. That is why Father said that God was unable to even show His face in the created world for thousands and tens of thousands of years as He searched for one man. Here is a passage from Father's Words regarding this matter:

Until the appearance of Master, the restoration of Adam was not possible. In order to restore this, even God, who created this vast universe with all-knowing and all-powerful abilities, could not appear in the created world for thousands and tens of thousands of years in His search for one man. You must know this love and painful heart (*han*) of God. (*Sermons of Sun Myung Moon*, 237-7)

The history of the past 6,000 years is a history of searching for one Adam. It is a history of recreating one Adam. Therefore, to create just one Adam, to create just one man, the blood and flesh of many people who were born and died on the way of the providence of restoration were needed as materials. The grievances of millions and billions of spirits must gather here. Then, only when this being appears on earth can the martyrs who shed blood and died in intense persecution feel joy in their martyrdom for the first time. Even if they are in the spirit world, through

establishing a relationship with the physical beings on earth, there can be liberation. It should not be a vague and abstract concept. The issue is how one has the awareness of this. (*Sermons of Sun Myung Moon*, 29-271)

Even to find one Adam without original sin, it required such a long time, the devotion of good ancestors, and the offerings of humanity. How much more difficult would it be if, in addition to that, God had to also restore one Eve without original sin? It would be a great challenge. If we can find the original Adam, Eve's restoration is simple. Would God need to go through such a complex, difficult, and sacrificial providence, taking twice the time? Those walking the path of the Providence must clearly understand that God does not do such things.

The Adam who comes as the new human ancestor, stands in the position of True Parents on the foundation of having restored Eve. By standing in the position of True Parents, he can restore all humanity. Therefore, God carried out His providence to restore only one Adam.

Only by understanding this Principle can we grasp what prerogatives the Messiah has. The Messiah is the one who came with the prerogative to remove the original sin of humanity. Therefore, we must also correctly understand the content written in the Bible as well.

There is no mention of "only begotten daughter" in the Bible. The term "only begotten daughter" itself is not found in the

Bible, and the concept of an “only begotten daughter coming without original sin” does not exist. However, since the Lord of the Second Advent who was born without original sin is the “only begotten Son,” we can use the term “only begotten daughter” to refer to the one who is chosen, first to remove her original sin, become the spouse of the Lord of the Second Advent, and be the woman who is the first to receive God’s love.

In 1960, True Father held the Holy Wedding Ceremony to become the True Parents. This was done from the position of Adam and Eve in their unfallen and perfected state. Therefore, True Parents, who received the blessing, stood in the original position of Adam and Eve. True Mother was the restored Eve but on that occasion the terms “Only Begotten Son” and “only begotten daughter” were used. In that sense, Father also used the term “only begotten daughter” several times before and after the Holy Wedding Ceremony. It is a matter that forms the foundation of the Principle of Restoration, and we must correctly understand this based on the Principle.

The basis for all of the Providential Word is the Bible. We believe in Father as the Lord of the Second Advent based on the promises written in the Bible. We should speak in a providential manner based on the Bible, and if we speak words that are not in the Bible, it becomes baseless fiction and falsehood. If our level were to be exposed to people from established churches or those with knowledge of the Bible, our standard would be seen as nonsensical. If theologians and people from established churches, who center their faith on the Bible, were to hear the story that

God sent an “only begotten daughter without original sin,” it would be considered an absurd and groundless fiction.

The Restoration of Eve Is the Responsibility of Adam

The Bible is the Word given by God to save fallen humanity. The salvation of humanity cannot be accomplished without the coming of the sinless Savior who comes on behalf of God. Therefore, the Bible can be regarded as the Word given to humanity for the providence of sending the Messiah, who is the representative of God. Consequently, the Bible contains the complete record of how God carried out the providence to send the Messiah. Let us revisit the records of history from the Book of Genesis to the Book of Malachi in the Old Testament, which contains the accounts leading up to the birth of Jesus as the Messiah, and let us also study the records in the four Gospels of the New Testament.

It began with the providence of the separation between Cain and Abel in Adam’s family, followed by the providence of salvation through Noah’s sons Shem, Ham, and Japheth. Then came the providence of the offering of Isaac in the family of Abraham, followed by the providence of the separation of Ishmael and Isaac, and the providence of the separation of Esau and Jacob in the family of Isaac. This continued with Jacob’s twenty-one-year course in Haran, the providence of Esau’s surrender to Jacob, and Joseph’s course of suffering in Egypt, which eventually led to him becoming the prime minister of Egypt. Then there was the providence of

Moses' birth after the Israelites' 400 years of suffering in slavery in Egypt, Moses' upbringing as an Egyptian prince, followed by his departure from Egypt. Throughout all these providences, including the period leading up to the birth of Jesus, involving Mary and Joseph, and the family of Zechariah, the providence of restoration through indemnity was conducted centering on men, while women played only supportive roles as wives and mothers.

In the genealogy of Jesus, there are five special women mentioned in the Gospel according to Matthew: Tamar, Rahab, Ruth, Bathsheba, and Mary. Although they were faithful wives and mothers who risked their lives to give birth to sons who would fulfill providential responsibilities, they were not the central figures of the providence. Abel, Noah and his sons, Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, and Moses, all walked a path in symbol and in image foreshadowing the course of the Messiah who would come later. Jesus came as the Messiah without original sin on the foundation established by these figures. Father also stood upon the foundation established by all these prophets and saints and came as the returning Messiah, just like Jesus.

In the sixty-six books of the Old and New Testaments, the records mainly focus on providential courses centered on men. There is no record of the providence related to sending a woman without original sin. The reason for this is that if the Messiah, the man without original sin, were to come, it would be relatively easy to restore through indemnity Eve, who fell due to the archangel, through the principle of re-creation. Since God created Adam and formed Eve from Adam's rib, when the perfected Adam-the

Messiah-comes, if fallen Eve, who acquired original sin through the unprincipled false love of the archangel, becomes one with the Messiah through true love based on the Principle, original sin is liquidated. Thus, Eve can be re-created, or restored through indemnity to her sinless state. It is based on this principle of creation and the principle of re-creation that God carries out the providence of restoration. Therefore, there is no principled basis or even the concept of a woman being born without original sin.

Father explained that since Adam, who was supposed to have dominion over Eve in the Garden of Eden, failed to have dominion, resulting in Eve's fall, the responsibility to restore fallen Eve lies with Adam. This means that God does not have the responsibility to restore Eve. Therefore, God would not send an Eve without original sin.

Let Us Not Forget the One God

In summary, God is one. In the "Original Divine Principle", it is stated, "From One to All Existence."

Recently, we have been expressing God as "Heavenly Parents." It is clear that "Heavenly Parents" consist of God and God's wife, but the two are not the same. The masculine subject represents God, and the feminine object represents God's wife. Together, they are referred to as the parents, but the "Father" who is God, and the "Mother" is God's wife. They are different.

The masculine subject is only one. God's wife is the

feminine object. The “Original Divine Principle” clearly defines that only the masculine subject is God. Terms like “Heavenly Mother” (Hananim Eomeoni) or “Mother God” (Eomeoni Hananim) should never be used.

The titles for God have also varied throughout history. In the Old Testament era, God was called the “Lord God,” and in the New Testament era, “Father God.” Now, since the True Parents have come, we can refer to God as “Heavenly Parents.” However, we must not forget the fact that God is only one, “the God who is the masculine subject.”

Furthermore, it is important to emphasize that in accordance with the principle of restoration through indemnity, Eve, who fell by uniting with the archangel through unprincipled love, can only remove the original sin and be restored as the Second Eve by becoming one with the Messiah, who comes as the Second Adam, through principled true love. This is the principle for the restoration of Eve. That’s why God said that since Eve fell due to the fact that Adam was not able to have proper dominion over Eve, based on the principle of restoration through indemnity, Adam has the responsibility to restore the fallen Eve as the Second Eve. We must remember this clearly.

Those of us, as central families, who have received the Blessing from True Parents should understand this truth properly and promulgate it. The leaders should preach and teach this truth, ensuring that everyone grasps the truth correctly.

The members throughout the world are in confusion, and

this cannot continue. Therefore, we need to educate the members properly and put them on the right track. Only then can we correctly record the achievements and value of our True Parents in history.

To convey this message accurately, I am sharing this kind of message.

Part 2



1. Ancestor Liberation and Ancestor Blessing Ceremony and the Governance of the Heavenly World
2. The Last Days and Satan's Natural Surrender
3. Why is the Messiah Born without Original Sin?
4. The Enemies of God -Atheism, Materialism, Evolutionism
5. Speaking out about How Kim Jinchun Is Destroying the "True Parent Ideal"
6. Testimony of How I Joined the Church



1. Ancestor Liberation and Ancestor Blessing Ceremony and the Governance of the Heavenly World

Today, I am delighted to have the opportunity to meet all the Cheon Il Guk leaders and the leaders who attended the special gathering of the New Korea Family Federation today.

The Value of Ancestor Liberation and Ancestor Blessing

What I feel today in this gathering is that our church is currently going through a great turning point. We have only three years left, including this year, until 2020. When asked if everything is going well by True Mother, I heard you all respond, “Yes.” However, not only I, but perhaps many of you also wondered if you answered with confidence. In other words, looking at our current reality, did we say “Yes” because we truly believed that we can accomplish the goal by 2020? Therefore, I believe that this time that is a great turning point will become an important new starting point that will determine our life or death for the next three years.

There are two main aspects of our church's work: witnessing and blessing. The Blessing is to change from Satan's lineage to God's lineage. The ultimate purpose of True Parents coming to this earth is the Blessing. They came to transform all people who inherited Satan's lineage into children who inherit God's lineage through the Blessing. For this purpose, the Word is necessary, and witnessing is also necessary.

However, when it comes to the Blessing, which is the most important weapon and responsibility that determines everything about us, I sometimes worry if we truly understand it. However, I believe that True Father has given us many Words, and you have all learned and experienced through the Principle and the providence, so I trust that you have gained various insights.

President Lee Giseong asked me to emphasize the topics of ancestor liberation and ancestor blessing. That is why I am here today to talk about the Blessing, not witnessing.

The Providence of the Blessing for Earthly Humans

True Father began the Blessing ceremony for earthly human beings just five days after the Holy Wedding of True Parents, which took place on April 11, 1960. It is relatively easy for people living on earth to gather. Given the opportunity, we can meet, converse, and even bring individuals to lecture halls. With their consent, we can assemble them in the Blessing ceremony venue. In five days, True Father conducted Blessing for the 3 couples. This marked the

beginning of the providence of the Blessing for earthly human beings.

The following year, there were 33 couples, and the year after that, 72 couples, 124 couples and so on. True Father established his own clan in this way. In 1968, Father conducted the Blessing for the 430 couples and continued with general Blessings.

The providence of salvation for earthly human beings was carried out easily in this manner. However, when it comes to salvation and Blessing for the spirits, what should be done? The entire spirit world was not under God's dominion but under Satan's control. There was no realm of God's dominion in the spirit world. What does this mean? It means that since the Fall of the human ancestors, Adam and Eve, all human beings born on earth inherited original sin. Only people with the lineage of Satan were being born.

After death, when spirits shed their physical bodies and enter the spirit world, they all have original sin. As a result, they found themselves within Satan's dominion and outside God's dominion. God cannot do anything with those who are within Satan's dominion, despite being omniscient and omnipotent, He was unable to do anything for the spirits within Satan's dominion. This is why God was in a position of complete exclusion from this world and was all alone.

Had the human ancestors not fallen but instead attained perfection, receiving God's Blessing and multiplied God's children, the earthly world would have become God's realm of dominion. Those who lived in the realm of God on earth would have gone to the spirit world, which would have been under God's dominion, where they would live eternally. However, due to the Fall of the

human ancestors, this did not happen. Instead, Satan gained dominion over both the earthly realm and the spirit world.

God sent Jesus as the Messiah 2,000 years ago, but Jesus departed for the spirit world without standing in the position of True Parents. In other words, Jesus was supposed to receive the Blessing and stand in the position of True Parents, but he was unable to do so and went to the spirit world. Therefore, as a single son who could not get married, he could not do anything. He was only half of God.

Consequently, in the spirit world, there is only one person with God's lineage, Jesus.

God and Jesus are the only two who are within the realm of God's dominion. But that is as good as saying there is none. All of humanity remained within Satan's dominion. So, until the coming of Jesus, was there anyone who entered Satan's dominion and pulled the spirits out from there? No, there was no one. Satan firmly held onto them, claiming, "All the spirits in my territory are of my lineage and my clan, so no one can take them away." This is Satan's assertion and his authority.

Therefore, even though Jesus came as the central figure of the providence of salvation for the spirits, he could not save a single spirit. Although he had disciples on earth, they went to the spirit world with original sin. Hence, they were under Satan's dominion, not under God's dominion. You must be aware of this.

Thus, until the arrival of True Parents, there was no one who could pull the spirits in the spirit world out. It was through True Father and True Mother becoming True Parents and

conducting the providence of the Blessing for human beings on earth that many Blessed families were born. Until August 24, 1995, True Parents could not give the Blessing to a single spirit. However, on August 24, 1995, True Father conducted the Blessing for three couples: True Father's parents (Chung Father and Chung Mother), True Mother's parents (Dae Bu nim and Dae Mo nim), and True Father's elder brother (Dae Hyeong) and his wife.

How was this possible? These three couples are directly related to True Father and True Mother. In the past, after Jesus passed away, Mother Mary became the central figure in Catholicism because she had a direct relationship and blood ties with Jesus. Similarly, because of their blood relationship with True Father and True Mother, the three couples: Chung Father and Chung Mother, Dae Father and Dae Mother, and Dae Brother and his wife, could be specially blessed by True Parents. This marked the beginning of the Blessing for spirits.

Beginning of the Blessing for Spirits

Looking at the subsequent history of the church, on November 29, 1997, during the Blessing ceremony in Washington, True Parents conducted the Blessing for 40 million couples on Earth and also blessed 1.6 billion spirit persons. At that time, there was neither Ancestor Liberation nor Ancestor Blessing. There was nothing that we did. However, True Parents accomplished it. So, how did they do it?

True Parents specially called and gathered spirits in the

spirit world who had died as infants, those who died before the age of fourteen without being married, and among them, those who had not committed sins. They granted them the grace of the Blessing. The spirits who had died as infants and those who had died unmarried before the age of fourteen are spirits who grew up in the spirit world to become adults. This was possible because they did not commit individual sins. As they had no individual sins and no descendants, True Parents specially blessed them.

Later, when you look at Father's Words on May 1, 1999, Father said, "I have Blessed 1.6 billion, 4.6 billion, 10 billion, and 12 billion couples." These were all spirits who had died as infants or had died before the age of fourteen without being married, and had grown up in the spirit world to become adults without committing sins. Therefore, these spirits were special cases. They received the Blessing through the special authority of True Parents without the help of their descendants.

Thus, on November 29, 1997, during the Blessing ceremony in Washington, 1.6 billion couples received the Blessing. Then, on December 1, 1997, True Parents held the "Proclamation for the Opening of the Blessing in the Spirit World." Father proclaimed that they could give the Blessing to spirits in the spirit world from then on. Additionally, on May 15, 1998, Father declared the "Liberation of Hell and the Opening of Heaven." On June 2, Father stated, "We must establish an educational system in the spirit world to provide education on the Principle." Furthermore, on June 13, 1998, during the first worldwide Blessing ceremony in New York for 360 million couples, Father also Blessed 4.6 billion spirit persons.

On this occasion as well, all of them were spirits who had died as infants or were unmarried up to the age of fourteen. Moreover, True Parents gathered a small number of spirits, including the Five Great Saints and the Three Great Devils, and conducted the Unification of the Spiritual and Physical Worlds Blessing Ceremony. This Unification of the Spiritual and Physical Worlds Blessing Ceremony was not a Blessing among spirits but between spirits and earthly people. It served as a bridge, playing a crucial role as a preparatory stage to Bless spirits as a whole.

During the Blessing ceremony for 430 couples, True Parents positioned only Korean couples at the front, with Mr. Ryu Gwangryeol, a Korean, and Mrs. Ohkusu Yamada, who was a resident in Japan with Korean-Japanese parents, standing behind them. Behind them stood the Japanese couple Chairman Kuboki and his wife, and True Parents gave the Blessing to them all together. By including them in the Blessing ceremony together, it opened the way for foreign couples to receive the Blessing. Similarly, by conducting the Unification of the Spiritual and Physical Worlds Blessing Ceremony, they opened the path to Bless spirit couples. After conducting the Blessing in this way, special things started happening from 1999.

At this point, there is one thing we should know about. That is about the Five Great Saints and the Three Great Devils who were blessed together on June 13, 1998. This is extremely significant. We can understand the Blessing of the Five Great Saints, but why bless the Three Great Devils with the saints? This is Father's grand strategy. To change this large spirit world, you must

grasp both extremes. Otherwise, it cannot be changed. The Five Great Saints represent the utmost good, while the Three Great Devils represent the utmost evil. By grasping both extremes and shaking them, the realm of hell in the spirit world can be moved. When the Blessing of the Three Great Devils was announced, we were all surprised. We thought that the devils should suffer more in hell, so how could they be blessed and liberated? Didn't we all think that way? However, it was done.

We were not the only ones who were surprised. Didn't the spirits in the spirit world also find it shocking? They thought, could those who were much worse than us receive the Blessing? But the other evil spirits started thinking, "If those worse than us can receive the Blessing, then maybe there is more hope for us who are better than them?" There was an uproar in the spirit world. They were excited, saying, "The opportunity to receive the Blessing will come to me someday!" This is the grand strategy to shake hell.

The Major Operation that Shakes Hell

What kind of year was 1999? It was the year when True Father turned seventy-nine years old. In God's providence, Moses in the Old Testament was the model course for Jesus, and Jesus' course was the model course for True Father. So, in the end, Moses' course became True Father's model course as well. Moses was supposed to enter Canaan at the age of eighty. However, he couldn't accomplish the course to restore Canaan because of

striking the rock twice, and it was Joshua and Caleb who led the way and entered Canaan.

Therefore, Father also had to restore Canaan at the age of eighty.

Moses' time was the age of the providence of restoration in symbol. Jesus' time was the age of the providence of restoration in image. Father's time was the age of the providence of restoration in substance. In Moses' time, it was enough to simply restore Canaan, in other words it was enough to have Joshua, Caleb, and the Israelites enter the land of Canaan. It was a symbolic age. However, in True Father's time, it was different because it was a substantial age. True Father had to substantially enter Canaan and establish a condition for the nation of Canaan. Simply entering was not enough. Therefore, 1999 was the busiest time for True Father.

On January 8, 1999, the "Proclamation of the Complete Liberation for the Cosmic Expansion of the True Blessing and the Rooting out of Satan's Bloodline" was held. The Cosmic Expansion of the Blessing refers to the need to bless all spirits in the spirit world and all people living on earth. This proclamation signifies that our liberation can only be achieved when the Blessings for the earthly people and the Blessings for the spirits are all completed, and there is not a single person left belonging to Satan's lineage.

In other words, in order for us to be completely liberated from Satan and live in peace within God's realm, we must eradicate Satan's lineage. Eradicating Satan's lineage means that there should not be a single person on earth or in the spirit world who belongs to Satan's lineage. Without welcoming such a time, there is no

fulfillment of God's providence, and we cannot be free. Therefore, the goal of 'True Parents' providence is to complete the Cosmic Blessing, which means Blessing all spirits and all people on earth, and eradicating Satan's blood lineage. True Father is striving for this goal.

On January 8, 1999, there was the Proclamation of the Complete Liberation for the Cosmic Expansion of the True Blessing and the Rooting out of Satan's Bloodline, and on February 12, 1999, the Ancestor Liberation Ceremony began. After that, on March 21, 1999, Satan naturally surrendered. And on May 14, 1999, the Cosmic Liberation Ceremony was held. Why was it done? It was because Satan surrendered. With Satan's surrender, the time for the liberation of the cosmos was in sight. And on September 9, 1999, there was the "Proclamation of the Liberation and Unification of the Cosmos of the Parents of Heaven and Earth." Here, there are five nines in the date (1999.9.9), but when this date is combined with the time that the event took place, which was at 09:09:09, and True Father's age of seventy-nine, it becomes a total of nine nines, so this day is called the "Nine-Nine Day" (Gu-Gu Jeol).

The Nine-Nine Day was the day when Father completely removed the barrier between the spirit world and the physical world, which was blocked by Satan, and proclaimed the unification of the cosmos. The day after, on September 10, 1999, the "Three-Ten Day" was proclaimed. On the 10th day at 10:10 a.m. Father did all of this conditionally. Father offered everything from one to nine, and also ten, to God. This signified the complete conclusion and liquidation of the restoration through indemnity of

the three ages of the Old Testament age, New Testament age, and Completed Testament age.

Then, on October 23, 1999, there was the “Proclamation of the Liberation Day for the Blessing of the Whole Cosmos.” Father held the Blessing liberation twice in the same year. Furthermore, on October 24, 1999, Father proclaimed the “Era of the Fourth Adam’s Realm.” What does this mean? What happens to Adam? The first Adam fell and became prey to Satan, right? Jesus, too, was violated by Satan and killed halfway through his course and was ultimately unable to accomplish his purpose. True Father, while fighting against Satan on this earth, suffered and endured all kinds of wounds. Surpassing the positions of these three Adams, Father stands in the position of a new, pure Adam, and that is the meaning of the proclamation of the Arrival of the Era of the Fourth Adam’s Realm.

Now, in order to serve God, we must serve Him from a position that surpasses the position of having to restore the Fall and be in a transcendental position. That is why True Father proclaimed the arrival of the era of the Fourth Adam’s realm. This is precisely what was spoken of as the goal of the “Coronation Ceremony of God’s Kingship.” One cannot serve God from the position of a wounded Adam. One must serve God from the position of a pure Adam. That is why Father made the proclamation of the arrival of the era of the Fourth Adam’s realm.

And on November 7, 1999, the Dedication Ceremony of the Cheon Seong Wang Rim Palace was held, and on December 12, 1999, the first Ancestor Blessing Ceremony began. This completely opened

the way for earthly people to liberate all spirits in the spirit world and for these spirits to receive the Blessing. True Father cannot accomplish the Will on the cosmic level on his own. However, Father's mission, True Parents' mission, is to pioneer and open all the paths necessary for the fulfillment of the Will. That is why starting from December 12, 1999, the Ancestor Blessing Ceremony was initiated, and through this, all spirits in the spirit world can be saved, liberated, and have their lineage completely changed.

The "Coronation Ceremony for the Kingship of God" and the Restoration of Canaan

True Parents most likely wanted to hold the "Coronation Ceremony for the Kingship of God" in the year 2000, which marked the beginning of a new millennium. However, the Blessing Ceremony started on December 12, leaving little time until the end of the year, so there was no time for it. Additionally, the "Return of the Cosmos to God" also needed to be performed, so the "Coronation Ceremony for the Kingship of God" was postponed to 2001. Therefore, on June 29, 2000, the "Proclamation of the Return of the Cosmos to God Ceremony" was conducted. First a ceremony was held to return the entire cosmos to God, and then on January 13, 2001, the "Coronation Ceremony for the Kingship of God" was conducted.

What happens if the "Coronation Ceremony for the Kingship of God" is held and God stands in the position of having restored His kingship? If we were to live in that world, that world would

indeed be Canaan. It means that we have entered a world where we are under the authority of God's kingship. By conducting the coronation ceremony, we stand in the position of having entered the substantial era of Canaan. This is indeed the substantial evidence that True Father successfully restored Canaan at the age of eighty.

Afterwards, on April 10, 2004, the "Liberation and Release of the Angelic World" was proclaimed. The angelic world was liberated and released from the realm of Satan. And on May 5, 2004, Father established the "Day of the Victory of the Number Ten Combining Two Halves" (Ssang Hap Ship Seung Il), proclaiming the beginning of the Era after the Coming of Heaven. On June 13, 2006, the "God and True Parents' Cheong Jeong Gung Entrance Ceremony" and the "Coronation Ceremony for True Parents, the King of Cosmic Peace" were held. Based on this, True Parents fulfilled all the significant missions of the providence of restoration.

If True Parents conducted the "Coronation Ceremony for the Kingship of God," there had to be a place on earth where God could reside. That's why True Parents were in a rush to build Cheon Jeong Gung. It had to be completed by June 13, 2006, so that on that foundation they could conduct the entrance ceremony of God and True Parents, and the Coronation Ceremony for True Parents, the King of Cosmic Peace.

One thing to note is that God is the King of Kings, and True Parent is the King of Peace. There is only one King of Kings, and that is God. Only God is the King of Kings, while True Parent is the King of Cosmic Peace. This may seem like a trivial matter, but it is significant. True Father never referred to himself as the

King of Kings.

We now can liberate the spirits and allow them to receive the Blessing. The question now is how we should utilize this ability. The place where these spiritual ceremonies can be conducted is the Cheongpyeong Heaven and Earth Training Center. There is no other place like this in the world. True Parents stated that such training centers should be established not only in Korea but also around the world. However, this has not yet been fully realized. The Cheongpyeong Training Center in Korea is also not fully utilized. When True Father visited the United States during his lifetime, he asked the person in charge at that time, "What is happening with the Ancestor Blessing Ceremony?"

Everyone, who do you think is at the center of all the work happening at this training center? In the past, you may have thought it was the Hunmo Nim and Daemo Nim, but it is actually True Parents who are at the center. They hold responsibility for everything and provide guidance in all spiritual matters. However, sometimes there are members who misunderstand and think that True Parents are not very involved and that only the staff members handle everything, but that is incorrect.

True Parents are the ones who do everything. The people below True Parents carry out their instructions. However, the person in charge could not lie when Father asked the question and could only hesitate. Therefore, True Father immediately saw through this hesitation and instructed, "You should do it until the 420th generation, not just until the 210th generation!" Doing it only until the 210th generation was not enough. Father also gave the same

instruction at the airport. He considered it very seriously and gave those instructions.

We must not neglect what True Parents have said and think about it as if it were something an ordinary person said. True Parents speak with God's providence on the line. It is completely different from giving instructions in an ordinary company. We must take it seriously, but in the end, we were unable to do so.

Looking at the situation of Ancestor Liberation and Ancestor Blessing in Korea afterwards, it seemed that there were not many people doing it. I frequently came, but I would see that it was always the same people who would come, and the same people who did not come. For those people who did not come, did they liberate and give the Blessing to all their ancestors. If the Blessing is done, then it is not an issue, but if they did not liberate or give the Blessing to their ancestors, what would that mean? It would be like abandoning their ancestors.

Ancestor Liberation and Ancestor Blessing Are Actual Works to Save Spirits

Our ancestors are eagerly and anxiously waiting for their descendants to save them. How frustrating do you think it is for them even though they are anxiously waiting for it, and yet we are not doing it? The ancestors are sending us various signs and yet their descendants do not recognize them. What will happen if we don't do it? When we neglect to do it, this can have detrimental

effects in the future. Illnesses and accidents may occur as a result. Because we have been uninterested in our ancestors, such consequences arise.

There are individuals who have completed Ancestor Liberation and Ancestor Blessing for their direct-line ancestors by continuously attending Cheongpyeong. However, even in such families, accidents occasionally happen. While an ordinary person might attribute it to mere bad luck, in the case of blessed families, it may not be so straightforward. Why is that? The ancestors up to the seventh generation are in a closer kinship relationship with us compared to the ancestors from previous generations. Our fathers and mothers have many siblings, and we have uncles and aunts on both paternal and maternal sides. Their sons and daughters are our cousins. This means there are many extended family members. However, if there are no Blessed families among them, they cannot receive the liberation and Blessing.

Blessed families typically focus on Blessing their direct-line ancestors and siblings. However, the extended family relatives in the spirit world hope that Blessed families will also liberate them and allow them to receive the Blessing. Yet, because we only prioritize our direct-line relatives and neglect them, they send signs asking us to do it for them as well.

Furthermore, among the extended family relatives, there are some who have no descendants. For them, if we do not provide the liberation and Blessing, they will fall into further despair. Regardless, the blessed families, who are in a kinship relationship with these relatives, are their lifeline. If we fail to fulfill our

responsibility, they will try everything possible to get our attention. Therefore, Blessed families must not only focus on their direct-line relatives but also liberate and bless their extended family members.

That is why I always emphasize the importance of the Blessing for the extended family members. We must liberate and bless the relatives up to the seventh generation whom we know, such as the close relatives of our grandparents and our parents' siblings. Especially for those who have passed away in accidents, we must liberate them as soon as possible. If we are unaware of these matters, our negligence may cause harm to those close to us. Therefore, we must carefully consider the Blessing for extended family members who are in a close kinship relationship. That way, our families will be safe.

Families that have received many ancestor blessings establish a "Good Spirit Shrine" (currently known as the Filial Piety Garden) to enshrine it. The spirits of the ancestors who have received the Blessing will come to live together in this shrine. I also have a Good Spirit Shrine in my home. I had a positive experience related to the Good Spirit Shrine. In my house, the Good Spirit Shrine was placed in the living room. On a particular day, we were renovating the damaged flooring material, so we had to move the furniture. On the last day, for the final construction of the living room, we moved the Good Spirit Shrine to a room that a Japanese member who helped with our household chores used.

That Japanese member had received the Blessing in the past, but before starting a family, the blessing had broken twice. That's why she came to my house to receive the Blessing again. So,

she was not yet a Blessed family. She was using one of the rooms in my house alone.

That night, while I was sleeping as usual, I had a dream where sirens were blaring, and a tall Western man wearing shorts, a short-sleeved shirt, and a sports cap turned backward was walking out of that room, holding a black-haired Western woman wearing a light khaki spring coat by her waist. The woman's face was turned away from me, so I couldn't see it. The man walked in step with her and exited through the front door.

Upon witnessing this, I realized that the spirits of the ancestors had actually cleaned and organized the rooms that my family had been using, but the room that the Japanese member, who was still not a Blessed family, had not been spiritually organized as much. However, by moving the Good Spirit Shrine to that room, the ancestors had driven out the spirits who were in that room.

Through this, I realized that the good spirits of my blessed ancestors actually descend to the earthly realm to protect us and are living together with us. People who don't understand it correctly may easily think that the Good Spirit Shrine is created as a mere commodity, where ancestral spirits come and reside. However, it is necessary to know that this is not the case. This is just one example, but it is important to clearly understand that the Ancestor Liberation and Ancestor Blessing that we perform in our church are real and are actually saving spirits. We must have a correct understanding that everything we do is not a means to attract people but is based on the actual occurrence of such events.

The Word of Truth, Witnessing, and the Blessing

If we had established our churches nationwide, as instructed by our True Parents, and conducted Ancestor Liberation and Ancestor Blessings there, would this country be like it is now? For the good spirits to carry out their tasks in the spirit world, the good spirits must occupy at least more than half of the spirit world. How many spirits who have received the Blessing do you think are in the good spirit world? There was a report stating that the number of good spirits is 480 billion. Then, how many spirits do you think exist in the spirit world? Human history spans at least 50,000 years. Converting 50,000 years into generations would be over 2,000 generations. So, what do you think the population would be? It would be between 1.5 trillion and 2 trillion. That's how many spirits there are. At least more than half of these spirits must be saved for the good spirit world to move as they desire. That is why Father urged us to quickly perform Ancestor Liberation and Ancestor Blessing. It is closely related to God's providence.

Regarding the work in the spirit world, Father said, "From now on, there will be times when 'people will make you sick and give you medicine,' and various other incidents will take place more often." I'm sure you have heard of such a Word. However, why do such things happen? It is because the number of good spirits in the spirit world is still insufficient. That is why, we must quickly liberate and give the Blessing to the spirits to fulfill the required numbers.

Our church is a church for all humankind, not just for the sake of our members. Our goal is to save all humankind. We are striving to save all the spirits in the entire spirit world and to save all the people on earth. We must know this and put it into practice. When the British members went to Korea, I told them not to go alone. In the UK, there is a sister named June Derby of the 777 couples. She is a person who follows exactly what I say after saying it once. I told her, "When you go to Korea, don't just go there. Take a bus and travel to various places, bringing many spirits with you." When that person came and looked spiritually at the training center, she saw that the spirits were coming in great numbers, like clouds. By bringing spirits with us in this way, those spirits receive the same grace as our ancestors.

In the past, Father said to let people receive the Blessing by placing a table on the roadside. We did the same in the UK. If they could provide their address, we would give them Holy Wine to drink and give the Blessing to them. Those who drank the Holy Wine were considered to have received the Blessing. That is how urgent True Parents were about this Blessing.

On April 3, 2007, Father declared the "Opening of the Era of the Cosmic Peace and the Realm of God's Civilization." Following the "Era of Cosmic Peace" is the word "God". Father declared the opening of the realm of God's civilization. Whose civilization is the current world? It is Satan's civilization based on atheism, materialism, and the theory of evolution. Isn't the world of atheism a world without God? In the current world God is not being taught in general schools. We must change this world into

the realm of God's civilization centering on God. That is the instruction of our True Parents. True Parents gave two instructions: the first is the "Cosmic Expansion of the True Blessing and the Eradication of Satan's Lineage," and the second is to carry out the "Movement to Reform Satan's Civilization into God's Civilization."

Mother spoke about "creating an environment," which means that we must create the realm of God's civilization. To create a world of God's civilization, we must not only perform Ancestor Liberation and Ancestor Blessing but also convey the Word of God's truth. Therefore, from now on, we must achieve our providential goals through conveying the Word of God's truth and the Blessing. Witnessing and the Blessing, these two must be done together for us to achieve our goals. It is not enough to focus on just one aspect. That's why it must be done with the Spirit and the truth.

Then, what is the truth? Conveying the Word of God's truth is witnessing. The Spirit refers to the Blessing through the liberation and Blessing ceremonies for spirits. Therefore, we are to realize the realm of God's civilization based on the Word and with the Blessing, we are to eradicate Satan's lineage to restore all human beings as God's children. With this, we must realize God's two great goals.

Since Father began the providential work for the salvation of humankind in 1960, it took him thirty-five years until 1995 to begin the providential work for the salvation of spirits by three couples of spiritual husbands and wives. Then, it took us thirty-nine years to open the formula course for us, the descendants, to save our ancestors in the spirit world, and it was

only on December 12, 1999, that we were able to succeed. The reason it took so long is that the providence of salvation for the spirits was that challenging.

By the end of 1997, through the Blessing conducted by True Parents for spirits who passed away as infants or unmarried individuals up to the age of fourteen, the territory of the realm of God expanded as they began to unite with the realm of God. Then, by the end of 1998, training centers for the education of spirits were established in the spirit world, and the education and training were conducted by *Divine Principle* lecturers who had received the Blessing on earth and had gone to the spirit world. And on February 12, 1999, the ancestral liberation ceremonies began at the Cheongpyeong Training Center.

The Church Where Hope Is Realized

Until True Parents appeared on April 11, 1960, it is said that only God and Jesus were in the spirit world on God's side. Since Jesus could not receive the Blessing, Heaven remained empty. Although the territory of God should be the Kingdom of Heaven, since there was no one who could enter, it was completely vacant, and only perfected couples who resemble God can enter. Therefore, even for couples who have received the Blessing, they can enter the Kingdom of Heaven only after our True Parents, who came as the human ancestors, have entered, and no one can enter before that. The spirit world beneath the Kingdom of Heaven consists only of

Satan's realm where fallen spirits reside.

Now, why is it like this? To establish training centers in the spirit world, there must be the territory of God. There must be the realm of God. We might think that performing the ancestor liberation ceremony is a simple matter. The ancestors who need liberation are not gathered in one place in the spirit world; they are scattered everywhere. So, when we write the names of our ancestors and submit the liberation request, the spiritual mediums in the training center must go to the spirit world and find where they are and pull them out from there.

Depending on the spirit world, there are places where if you enter by mistake, you get captured by evil spirits and cannot escape. Only those who have been given the prerogative by God can go to such places and pull out the spirits targeted for liberation. It is even difficult to enter such spirit realms, and it is even more challenging to pull the spirits out. You must understand that in order to break through this kind of difficulty, we need to pull the spirits out and send them to the training center to liberate them. We must know that we, as blessed families, are searching for our ancestors overcoming these difficult paths. Sometimes, it requires risking our lives, and we must know that it was even more challenging in the early days of the liberation when we first started doing it.

On the foundation of such sacrificial efforts, we established the training centers in the spirit world and the ancestor liberation ceremonies. However, not being able to fully utilize the grace bestowed by our True Parents in these efforts is an act of filial

impiety before our True Parents.

Are we performing the ancestor liberation and ancestor Blessing for the sake of our True Parents? Of course, from an overall perspective, it is for the sake of God's Will, and it also has an aspect of helping our True Parents in their work. However, fundamentally, it is for the sake of our ancestors who are suffering in hell. If our ancestors are suffering and unhappy, there is no way that things will go well for the descendants. There is no happiness for all humankind.

I mentioned before that if we calculate the number of generations of all our ancestors, it would be close to 2,000 generations. However, our True Parents instructed us to perform ancestor liberation and ancestor Blessing only up to 420 generations. Currently, liberation beyond the 210th generation is done in the spirit world, so we are only performing the ancestor Blessing. It was said that once we complete the ancestor Blessing up to the 420th generation, the liberation and Blessing for the generations beyond that will all be done in the spirit world.

We must encourage all Blessed families to complete the ancestor liberation and ancestor Blessing up to the 210th generation and work together to achieve the completion of the 420th generation ancestor Blessing. This is the path to reduce the burden of God and True Parents as well as the suffering of the members.

For the providence of salvation, God has gone through tremendous sufferings and sacrificed many people over a long period, and it is on such a foundation that our church was established. And we, the Blessed families, have received the Blessing

in this church. The number of people who have received the Blessing is very small compared to the total number of humankind. Even though it is a small number, if those who have received the Blessing are not able to keep it and live accordingly, what will happen to them when they go to the spirit world while being pulled by Satan? Even though they were blessed by True Parents after much suffering, if that person cannot enter the realm of God but is once again taken by Satan, what will happen?

In that case, what will happen to God's hardships until now? It will all have been in vain. The sacrifices so many people made for God's providence will have been in vain. Therefore, for Blessed families to live a life worthy of being a Blessed family and to go into God's presence without exception is the path of filial piety toward God. It is unfilial if we are not able to go into God's presence even though we have received the Blessing.

It is the same for our True Parents. If the sons and daughters they have raised cannot live properly and are taken by Satan again, it will bring shame to God and our True Parents. How much will Satan laugh at that? We must prevent such things from happening at all costs.

Now, both the first generation and the second generation members are not coming to church. The current state is that we are not taking care of the members. What will happen if, despite receiving the tremendous Blessing, giving birth and raising sons and daughters, they are all taken away? Of course, it is important to engage in witnessing to new people, but it is crucial to properly protect the Blessed families. We have many things to do, saying,

“Let’s be filial and loyal to God and True Parents,” but first and foremost, protecting the members and their children is the root of filial piety and loyalty offered to God and True Parents. We must keep this in mind and protect the root.

For those of you attending this kind of general assembly for the first time this year, I hope this gathering can truly revitalize our church, become a new catalyst for creating a church where all members can live lively and joyful lives of faith. And in carrying out this task, whose responsibility is the greatest? Of course, all Blessed families must take responsibility. However, among them, the church leaders bear a greater responsibility. Today, I have great expectations as I meet all of you. I believe this applies to every member as well. I hope that from now on, all of us can become renewed and vibrant, and that our church becomes a place where our hopes come true. Meeting all of you today has truly heightened my expectations. I believe this applies to every individual as well.

2. The Last Days and Satan's Natural Submission

Introduction

Today, I would like to share a story that begins with an article I read in a newspaper while I was in the United States. In major cities in the United States with a significant Korean population, Korean newspapers are published. These newspapers are provided in places where many Koreans gather, allowing them to freely take and read them. I was living in Atlanta, Georgia, where there is a large Korean community, and we had Korean newspapers there. Among them were three papers: the *Chosun Ilbo*, *JoongAng Ilbo*, and *Hankook Ilbo*. I particularly enjoyed reading the *Chosun Ilbo*. Then, on December 14 of last year, an interesting article appeared in the *Chosun Ilbo*.

Unlike in Korea, in the Western world, astrology and fortune-telling based on star signs are quite popular for predicting the future. There are many astrologers, and one of the most famous ones is Nostradamus, a Frenchman. I'm sure everyone around the

world is familiar with him. On that day, the newspaper featured an article about Nostradamus' portrait.

The article was written by a professor of Western Art History at Pohang University of Science and Technology. While discussing Nostradamus' portrait, the professor provided a brief explanation about Nostradamus himself. Nostradamus was born on December 14, 1503, and passed away on July 2, 1566. Interestingly, the professor wrote this article on Nostradamus' birthday.

Nostradamus' Last Prophecy

Nostradamus is his Latin name, and his French name is Michel de Nostredame. He worked as a pharmacist and physician. During the outbreak of the plague at that time, he extensively used extracts from rosehips as a source of vitamin C. He emphasized hygiene and isolation and treated many patients. However, shortly afterwards, his beloved wife and two sons died from the plague. It was during this time that he experienced a significant spiritual transformation.

He devoutly prayed to God and began to pursue the path of an astrologer. He was bestowed with the wisdom to predict the future through astrology and wrote a collection of prophecies in 1555, the well-known *Les Prophéties* or *The Prophecies of Michel Nostradamus*. In this collection, he predicted many significant events that would occur in the future, such as major epidemics and wars. Remarkably, all of his prophecies came true.

His final prophecy was about the year 1999, predicting it was the Last Days where the earth would split apart. As a result, many believers in Nostradamus anxiously awaited the arrival of that year. However, the predicted apocalyptic event of the earth splitting apart did not occur.

For Christians, the Last Days refer to a time when the earth splits and undergoes the fire of judgment, interpreting the content of the Bible literally and believing in such an event. However, since such phenomena did not actually happen, Nostradamus' name faded from the public eye because his last prophecy did not come true.

However, those who understand the Unification Principle know that the Last Days do not involve the earth splitting or cataclysmic events but rather a change in the sovereignty of heaven and earth. It is a time when Satan's sovereignty ends, and God's sovereignty begins. Therefore, basing the interpretation solely on the phenomenon of the earth splitting, it is believed that Nostradamus' prophecies did not come true. However, those who understand the Principle have a different interpretation.

Satan's Natural Submission in 1999

Everyone, do you know when Satan surrendered within the course of Father's providence? It was on March 21, 1999. On that day, the Archangel Lucifer (Satan) surrendered before God and Father. If that is the case, then that moment is indeed the Last Days based on the perspective of the Principle. The sovereignty of heaven and earth

changed, so isn't that day the Last Days?

If Nostradamus' prophecies had come true exactly as predicted, people would have thought, "That person is truly amazing. How did he manage to predict it?" However, all Nostradamus did was observe the stars using the wisdom bestowed on him by God.

On the other hand, what about Father? He never heard or learned about such prophecies. Yet, Father came to this earth as the Messiah and walked a path that led to Satan naturally surrendering before God and Father in 1999. Isn't that astonishing?

Therefore, today I will talk about the reasons why Satan naturally surrendered in 1999. To understand this, we need to comprehend the course Father walked and the providence Father accomplished. Today, I will share with you an important part of that course.

The National Victory over Communism Rally and Heungjin Nim's Seonghwa

On January 2, 1984, Heungjin Nim ascended to the spirit world. What happened at that time? In December 1983, Father himself conducted a nationwide tour of the eight major cities in South Korea, visiting the provincial capitals and presiding over the Victory Over Communism Rally. However, I was not in Korea at the time as I was overseas serving as the European continental director.

The final speech was delivered on December 23, 1983, in

Gwangju, South Jeolla Province (now Gwangju Metropolitan City). I returned to Korea in time for that event because many spiritual mediums received revelations that Father's life was in danger. Therefore, leaders from around the world made up their minds to protect Father and came to Korea.

The venue for the last speech was an indoor gymnasium in Gwangju, South Jeolla Province. Upon my return from Europe, I bowed to True Parents and participated in the rally on that day.

At that time, there were rumors of assassination attempts by North Korean agents. We prayed for the venue in Gwangju to be packed with people so that no one would be able to move due to the crowd. Even if assassins were present, they wouldn't be able to do anything. So we prayed for a full house, and that's exactly what happened. Despite Satan's evil intention to assassinate Father, it became an impossible situation. However, while True Father remained unharmed, a tragic incident occurred in America. True Parents' beloved son, Heungjin Nim, was involved in a fatal car accident and sustained life-threatening injuries. In the end, Heungjin Nim became a sacrifice in place of Father.

Heungjin Nim passed away on January 2, 1984. At that time, Father, without shedding a single tear, presented Heungjin Nim as a public offering of love before God. The condition of having overcome death through love was established as the Day of Victory of Love, and Heungjin Nim was given the mission as Father's representative and was sent to be the Supreme Commander in the spirit world. Normally, the spirit world cannot be changed without True Parents' going there, but Father sent Heungjin Nim as

his representative ahead of himself to the spirit world.

Satan Who Ruled Mankind for 60,000 Years

How long do you think it has been since the birth of humanity? While it was not known precisely before, scientists have concluded through the study of human DNA evolution that it is over 55,000 years. This means that the history of Homo sapiens on Earth is at least over 55,000 years.

However, I personally believe it is closer to 60,000 years. In the Bible, the providential history is recorded as 6,000 years, which can be seen as compressing 60,000 years into a tenth of that time. Thus, Satan effectively ruled over heaven and earth for 60,000 years. But why did such a Satan come to surrender to God and Father?

Satan is cunning. Although Adam and Eve were still in a state of immaturity, he was the main instigator in causing the fall of Adam and Eve. It is inconceivable that Satan would surrender without any reason.

Satan tried everything to maintain his authority. So what did he do when Jesus came? He invaded John the Baptist to prevent him from fulfilling his responsibility and made it so that the high priests, the scribes, and everyone else would not believe in Jesus as the Messiah. Finally, even the twelve apostles doubted and fled from Jesus, leading to Jesus' crucifixion.

The same pattern repeated at the time of the Second Advent. When Father came to this earth, Father faced worldwide

opposition. Who caused this? Satan knew that if people went to Father, his dominion would come to an end. So he launched a global movement to oppose Father. Satan fabricated lies in the United States, Europe, and around the world, to deter people from going to Father. While Satan couldn't stop the coming of the Messiah, his ultimate strategy was to prevent Father from fulfilling his mission after his arrival.

Nevertheless, Father was able to bring Satan to a natural surrender. How difficult this must have been!

Historically, since the fall of Adam and Eve, Satan has been obstructing God's providence of salvation. From the beginning of God's providence of salvation, Satan has been killing or causing individuals who stood on God's side to fail, while promoting atheism that claims there is no God, materialism that claims the human mind is a product of matter, and the theory of evolution that denies God's creation, in order to prevent humanity from accepting God's providence of salvation. Finally, he created communist nations and promoted a global communist policy to destroy the free world.

Father's Greatest Mission

What is the mission of Father, who came as the Messiah? The mission of the Messiah is to transform the lineage of fallen humanity into the lineage of God, making them God's sons and daughters and saving them. Therefore, if Father removes the lineage of Satan from all human beings on earth and in Heaven,

transforming them into God's sons and daughters, Satan will lose his place.

Satan came to rule over humanity because humans fell and inherited the lineage of Satan. By those conditions, Satan ruled over both the earthly and heavenly realms. So, if there is no human being with Satan's lineage remaining, Satan will perish.

Therefore, the primary purpose of Father's providence is to transform the lineage of Satan. Removing the lineage of Satan and restoring fallen humanity as God's sons and daughters is Father's greatest objective. Only then can Father achieve victory, and God can achieve victory.

Since the liberation of Korea in 1945, Father began the providence and conducted the providence to unify with the established churches. However, just as John the Baptist did not believe and obey Jesus despite testifying to him, Pastor Kim Baekmun, representing the spiritual groups in Korea, also did not believe and obey Father despite testifying to him. Therefore, True Father went to North Korea and walked a path of suffering. After achieving victory there, he returned to Korea and established the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity on May 1, 1954, initiating the full-scale providence of salvation.

The Blessing Providence of Spirit Persons and Earthly Persons

On April 11, 1960, Father held the Holy Marriage Ceremony, receiving the Blessing from God and became the True Parents,

opening the way to transform earthly human beings into God's sons and daughters through the change of lineage. Therefore, on April 16, which was five days after the Holy Wedding, Father oversaw the Blessing Ceremony for the 3 couples. This Blessing Ceremony marked the beginning of the providence of the change of lineage for humanity.

In this manner, the providence of the change of lineage to make individuals God's sons and daughters began in April 1960. Then, in 1961, True Father conducted the Blessing for 33 couples, followed by 72 couples in 1962 and 124 couples in 1963. By blessing 430 couples in 1968, the path was opened to bless True Father's clan and beyond.

Consequently, in 1970, 777 couples were blessed, followed by 1,800 couples in 1975 and 6,000 couples in 1982, gradually expanding the providence of the Blessing on earth. However, establishing the providence of salvation for spirits in the spirit world was not easy.

True Father desired to conduct the providence of the change of lineage for the spirits in the spirit world, alongside the providence for earthly human beings. Nevertheless, the providence for the spirit world was not easy. It was only on August 24, 1995, that the Blessing for three couples of spirits began. To realize this, Father had to make a jeongseong condition that cannot be described in words.

Particularly, after Heungjin Nim ascended to the spirit world in January 1982, and Hong Sunae ascended to the spirit world on November 3, 1989. True Father sent Hong Sunae to the spirit world

as a representative of Mother. It was during that time that Heungjin Nim and Hong Sunae took the lead and initiated preparations in the spirit world along with those who had received the Blessing on earth and ascended to the spirit world.

While I was in Europe, there were rumors among individuals with spiritual insights that Jesus was seen together with Heungjin Nim. Christian believers received revelations of Heungjin Nim being accompanied by Jesus. People shared these rumors, serving as evidence of Heungjin Nim's role alongside Jesus in providential work.

In this way, True Father, despite having limited power, initiated the providence to bring about transformation in the spirit world from that time. Thus, on August 24, 1995, the Blessing for three couples of spirits was conducted for the first time. These three couples included True Father's parents (Chung Father and Chung Mother), True Mother's parents (Dae Father and Dae Mother), and Father's elder brother's couple. This marked the first Blessing of lineage conversion for three couples in the spiritual realm.

The Blessing of 1.6 Billion Pairs of Spirit Persons and the Spirit World Training Center

It has been 2,000 years since Jesus came, but in the spirit world ruled by Satan, not a single spirit has been removed from Satan's jurisdiction. After Jesus came as the Messiah and was resurrected spiritually, he labored hard for 2,000 years, but because Jesus did not become the True Parent through God's blessing of the Holy

Marriage, he could not change the satanic lineage.

I said that the history of mankind is 60,000 years, but how many times have humans reproduced during that time? Father did not announce it, but I estimated that the population would be close to 2 trillion. The fallen people on earth and in the spirit world are close to 2 trillion in number.

Countless numbers of spirits exist in the spirit world, but not even one person has done a lineage change in that place. The twelve apostles of Jesus also went to the spirit world, but they too did not get rid of Satan's lineage. Even the apostles have Satan's lineage, so they still went to Satan's realm of paradise. They could not be completely moved into God's realm. The spirit world, until Father passed away, was in such a state.

God created only Heaven, God did not create hell. Why did hell arise? As fallen humans go and live in the spirit world, hell naturally comes to be. Because all fallen humans belong to Satan, the place where they live is just Satan's realm. So, Heaven, which is God's realm, is empty. That place can be entered by no one but God and Jesus. Even if God and Jesus can go there, what would they do there? God and Jesus must also work, so they cannot enter either. So, all of Heaven is empty.

In the end, no one makes the realm of God, until Father comes to bless earthly humans and those blessed spirit people go to the spirit world. However, persons who have gone to the spirit world from among the blessed families, because they are of God's lineage, do not go to Satan's realm. It is said that even if you cannot go to Heaven, you will come to live in God's realm.

Therefore, God's paradise realm, God's realm of the middle spirit realm will arise.

Therefore, from the time when the blessed family was created on earth, for the first time, even if it was small, God's realm began to arise. Since there are not many blessed family members on earth, there cannot be many members who are in the spirit world.

It is said that when Father blessed 3 spirit person couples on August 24, 1995, and then blessed 40 million spirit person couples in Washington on November 29, 1997, he then blessed 1.6 billion spirit person couples. At that time, we had not yet done even one ancestor liberation. But how did he bless 1.6 billion pairs?

The answer is found in the words Father spoke on May 1, 1999. Father said that all the spirit persons who lived on earth and died in infancy and those who died under the age of fourteen without being married and who grew up in the spirit world could be blessed. So he blessed those who grew up and became adults in the spirit world based on the True Parent's prerogative.

How could Father do that? He said it was comparatively easy to give the blessing because the spirits had no descendants.

When ancestors who have descendants are blessed, they will have a way to work with their own descendants. So, if there are many blessed ancestors, they can work on their own descendants, and the power of Satan may disappear quickly. So Satan is going to make that process more difficult.

However, Satan cannot prevent the blessings of spirit persons who became adults after growing up as children in the

spirit world without descendants. Because of the Parent's prerogative, he blessed 1.6 billion pairs of spirit persons, and from here, God's realm in the spirit world began to grow.

After blessing 1.6 billion couples in that way, then on December 1, 1997, Father proclaimed the opening of the blessing of the spirit persons in the spirit world. And on May 15, 1998, he proclaimed the opening of Heaven and the liberation of hell. Against this background, in the words he spoke on June 2, 1998, he said that an education system should be created that enables the practice of the Principle in the spiritual world. Until then, there were no training centers in the spirit world. But, for the first time, the blessed spirits could go to the spirit world and God's realm began, because he had blessed 1.6 billion spirit person couples and thus created God's territory. Among the blessed families in the spirit world, there are Principle instructors, and the number of families has increased, so the way to create a training center in the spirit world has been opened. This was all undertaken and done by Father.

The Blessing of 4.6 Billion Pairs of Spirit Persons and the Unification Blessing Ceremony of the Spirit World and Physical World

So, after Father said that the training center should be opened on June 2, on June 13, 1998, he blessed 4.6 billion spirit person couples in New York and held an event to bless the five great saints and the three great devils at the same time.

At this time, Father held the unification blessing of the

spirit world and the physical world. This is immensely important. Before the blessing of spirit persons began in earnest, he matched an earthly person with a spirit person as a couple and blessed them. Since the road to the blessing of earthly people is already open, the blessing of an earthly person with a spirit person to form a blessed couple was used as a bridge to open the way to the blessing of spirit persons.

Previously, during the 1968 blessing of 430 families, Father had blessed Mr. Yu Gwangryeol, the cultural director of the Korea Association and Ms. Oyama Gunja, the daughter of President Oyama, a Korean resident in Japan with Korean and Japanese parents, and President and Mrs. Osami Kuboki of Japan. That was a bridge to connect the blessings that had started in the Republic of Korea to Japan. It opened the way for the blessing of the Japanese family in Japan by allowing the participation of Koreans, Korean-Japanese, and Japanese couples in the place where Father was blessing the Korean people.

In the same way, the blessing of spirit persons came about through the unification blessing ceremony of the spirit world and physical world in which earthly people and spirit persons were blessed as couples. At that time, Father blessed five saints: Ms. Jang Jeongsun and Jesus, Ms. Choe Wonbok and Shakyamuni, President Lee Gyeongjun and Confucius, Ms. Lee Jeongok and Muhammad, and Ms. Kim Myeonghui and Socrates.

At that time, I was very surprised to see the blessings of the five great saints and the three great devils together. The blessing of the five great saints is understandable, but I was puzzled

at how Father could bless the three most evil devils. Everyone, did you not think that as well? Even if they were to be blessed, surely they would be the very last persons to be blessed. So why did Father do that?

This is what I call shock therapy. It was the first time for spirit persons to see such a thing. At first, when they saw that Father had blessed the three great devils who were worse than themselves, they wondered about it. But when they tried to think calmly about it, if spirits who were more evil than they were could be blessed, would it not open up the way for evil spirits, who were at least better than they were, to also be blessed? So in this way this was revealed to them in advance.

In doing so, a commotion took place in the spirit world. Spirit persons were all thinking, "Now our time has come." This makes me think that this was a kind of shock therapy. For that kind of Providence, on June 13, 1998, Father celebrated the blessing of 4.6 billion couples of spirit persons who, after dying as babies and children up to the age of fourteen and growing up in the spirit world and becoming spirit persons, together with a number of unification blessings held between the spirit world and physical world centered on the five great saints and the three great devils. After blessing 4.6 billion couples in this way, Father opened up the way to being able to bless the spirit world with a free mind.

Eradication of Satan's Lineage and Satan's Natural Submission

Then, on January 7, 1999, Father proclaimed the completion of the

Providence of restoration. And on January 8th, he proclaimed the “Proclamation of the Complete Liberation for Cosmic Expansion of the True Blessing and the Rooting Out of the Satanic Lineage.”

We have to spread over the entire world the blessing that he has given to us. It is said that the cosmic expansion of the true blessing means that blessings are shared not only on earth but also in heaven. In doing so, when we complete the eradication of the satanic lineage, we will all receive emancipation. Father knew that he had to do all this, so he made this proclamation.

Meanwhile, on February 12, 1999, the ancestor liberation ceremony was started in Cheongpyeong, Korea. Did we not go to Cheongpyeong Training Center back then? And on March 21st, Satan naturally submitted.

Satan was calmly watching, and now, his own realm was just being shaken from within. Father proclaimed the liberation of hell and opened the gates of Heaven, and billions were blessed, but Satan could not stop the trend, so saying “Now, my time is over,” he naturally submitted before Father and God.

Did that happen because Satan is stupid? It was the self-realization that he could not block God’s Providence any more. In doing so, the chief of evil since ancient times already submitted to God’s side, nevertheless, the forces of evil still remain because the remnants under him are still doing what they used to do in the old days.

9-9 Holiday Proclamation: On September 9, 1999, Father proclaimed Gugujeol (九九節). There are eight number nines in the date and time September 9, 1999 at 9:09:09, and if you add the

number nine in Father's age of seventy-nine years at that time, you get nine number nines, which formed the basis for the establishment of the 9-9 Holiday (Gugujeol). Gugujeol was proclaimed on the day when all barriers created by Satan between the spirit world and the earthly world were broken down.

3-10 Holiday Proclamation: At 10:10 AM on September 10, 1999, the day after the proclamation of Gugujeol, Father proclaimed the 3-10 Holiday (Samsipjeol 三十節). This day is the day that the numbers 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, and 10 all return to God, and Father said it was the day of liquidation when everything in the Old Testament Age, the New Testament Age, and the Completed Age were completely restored through indemnity.

November 7, 1999: On November 7, 1999, the completion ceremony of the Cheonseong Royal Palace was held in Cheongpyeong.

December 12, 1999: From this day, we started blessing ancestors at the Cheonseong Royal Palace. Thereby, the way has been completely opened for our descendants on earth to be able to completely save our ancestors in the spirit world. Now, if we on earth hold the ancestor liberation ceremony and ancestor blessing ceremony, all of our ancestors will be able to receive salvation. Father said that if we take responsibility for 430 generations, the predecessor generations will take responsibility and do everything in the spirit world. From now on, we will evangelize the people around us, and even if evangelism fails, if you encourage them to liberate their ancestors and bless their ancestors, the liberation of Korea's spiritual world will be accomplished quickly. The day of

liberation and victory for Korea will come soon.

Everyone, what did we do when we were blessed? We had to have been at least three years in the church, have led a public life for at least three years, and have three spiritual sons and daughters. And previously married couples had to be consecrated for seven years before they were able to be blessed. But what about now? Do such conditions still exist?

Now, don't we bless couples without questioning whether they have completed the three-year periods of church membership and public life and without questioning whether they have three spiritual children? Because the spiritual world has changed to such an extent, Satan can no longer accuse them. We are able to do this, because Satan's power has weakened.

Ancestor Liberation and Blessing of the 210th and 430th Generations

To receive the blessing is gradually getting easier, and the speed of the Providence depends on how quickly we liberate spirit persons. No matter how hard we pray here, it is of no use. We must know that God's Providence cannot be accomplished, unless we quickly liberate the spirit persons in the spirit world. That is why Father said that all blessed families should hold ancestor liberation and blessing ceremonies until the 210th generation.

At that time, I frequently went to the Cheongpyeong Training Center, but only people who always come came, and people who did

not come continued not to come. That is because many family members do not fully understand about the blessing of spirit persons. Blessing is the way to immediately save us and the way to be able to complete God's will. Of course, there are difficult conditions and monetary costs, but the main problem is not doing it.

Although the number of members is small, the Providence would have progressed more quickly if all the members had been mobilized to liberate and bless their ancestors. The numbers of members are still few, and because not many of them participated, progress has been sluggish.

It was around 2010 when Father went back and forth between Korea and the United States. Father asked Hunmo Kim Hyonam, "What the hell is going on?" She could not lie; she just hesitated, since Father already knew everything and had called the Korean President. He encouraged him to issue an official letter to encourage more participation up to the 430th generation of ancestors. Even after going to the airport for departure, he once again made the same demand. So, an official notice was issued, but since there were no big changes to be seen, the Providence fell behind a lot.

If you go to Japan, even now there are cases of the kidnapping of our members. In the early days of Korea, members were taken home and had their hair cut off, but that kind of thing disappeared a long time ago. It has disappeared because the spirit world has already become different. However, there are still things like kidnappings going on because Japan has not become different in the spirit world.

Because the Japanese family had the donation Providence, they focused on giving, so they were not able to liberate and bless many of their ancestors. Japan is far behind Korea. So when Japanese people come to Korea, they say that the Korean spiritual world is bright. Naturally, they feel it.

So, the liberation and blessing of ancestors are closely connected to the development of God's Providence. So Father said that in order to be liberated, we must complete the cosmic expansion of the true blessing and the rooting out of Satan's lineage. In this way, on March 21, 1999, Satan naturally submitted.

Then, if at least half of the spirit world comprises blessed families, as Father said, it will happen that spirit persons will come to the earth to give you sickness and give you medicine. If they come to their descendants and those descendants do not listen to them, they will give them sickness and medicine, and if the descendants still do not listen, they will be taken to the spirit world. They do this because it is faster to save them by taking them to the spirit world where they can no longer sin, than by allowing them to live on earth for a long time and thus enabling them to sin. Father said that such a time will surely come. Whether this comes early or late depends on what we do.

Now, centered on the Cheongpyeong Training Center, ancestor liberation is also being done in the provinces, but I don't know well how to do it. To do this properly, you need a spiritualist. That way you can be sure.

What will happen if we simply hope without doing what we need to do first? Do we pray to God and then do the work we have

to do, or can we accomplish our responsibility by simply praying to God without doing the work we have to do? The Providence is not so easy. The power of Satan will disappear somehow when people on earth are blessed quickly by eradicating Satan's lineage, and by quickly blessing spirit persons in the spirit world.

What we need to know here is that witnessing to earthly people is difficult and takes a long time, but the liberation and blessing of spirits can be done quickly. Therefore, we must do our utmost to save spirit persons.

And in 2000, Father turned eighty. Moses returned to Canaan on the spiritual level at the age of eighty, but Father eradicated Satan's lineage at the age of eighty and returned to Canaan on the substantial level.

Nevertheless, it was no simple matter to accomplish this. On June 17, 2000, Father held an ocean restoration ceremony to return the oceans to God, then a land restoration ceremony to return the land to God on June 24, and finally a cosmic restoration ceremony on June 29. On January 13, 2001, after three rounds of ceremonies to return all the sea, land, and the whole of heaven and earth to God, the enthronement ceremony of God's kingship was held.

If the enthronement ceremony of God's kingship has been held, does that not mean that everything has been accomplished? Now sovereignty comes from God. Even so, if God's people are few, how will they become a nation? No matter how much God has the kingship, there must also be people. Who makes those people? Does Father make them? Father opened up the way for us. Even though he has opened up the way, we must do our part.

We are late because we could not do what we are supposed to do. It is not because Father could not do something that we are late. He has told us that he has done everything he needed to do and has already taught us everything he was going to teach us. By the way, how well do we know Father's words?

In that respect, Father is in an amazing position. Even though Father has taught us everything, if some spiritualist says something, we follow that, and if he says something else, we follow that, too. If we look within ourselves now, what is going on? We are talking as if Father did not do anything. Who did all these providential things? Father did it all.

Conclusion

The center of the Providence is Father. We should know this. Such a Father taught us everything, but we do not know and have not lived in accordance with his words. We must reflect on this. Although the Church says that there has been no progress in the past or present, the completion of the Providence is only a matter of time. Victory has already been decided. The only question is whether it will happen early or late.

To turn around and blame this on Father is unpardonable. Anyone who saves just one person's life on earth is a great person, but Father is the one who has saved the lives of two trillion people, namely, all the people in the spirit world and all the people on earth. All human beings on earth must follow Father in

order to have the lineage of God. We must receive Father's blessing. The same is true of the spirit world. Father is the one who opened the way forward for the two trillion spirit persons of the spirit world, the 7.6 billion people on earth, and all life.

Has anyone ever done this in human history? Father has no choice but to become the kind of Father that all humankind will support and cherish forever and ever. It is not even what Father himself wants. But isn't the Providence like that? That is the will of God.

We, who are supposed to honor and serve such a Father, must reflect on how much we trust, respect, and follow Father. This is the gist of what I was going to talk about today.

I am hearing that the number of members in our church is decreasing, but that is really pitiful. If we make a mistake, we need to know that not only we ourselves will perish, but our descendants will also perish. It is alright if one perishes because of one's own mistakes, but our descendants will also perish depending on whether we do well or not. We must speak and move deliberately knowing that our actions, whether we go to the left or right, govern not only our own destiny but also the lives of our descendants.

3. Why Is the Messiah Born without Original Sin?

It has been a while since I last met you and said hello. So thank you for allowing me to tell you at least part of the story I want to tell. Today I would like to briefly mention only two things.

Realizing the Problems with Kim Jinchun's Recent Special Lecture

While I was in the United States, I heard the news that a man named Kim Jinchun, under Mother's instructions, gave a special lecture in Korea. I did not attend at the time, so I do not know the full details of what the lecture was about, but I heard the gist of it. So today, first of all, I will tell you my thoughts about that special lecture.

If we entered the content of what Mother would say into a robot, we would not be able to say anything about that robot. Because that robot would have said just what it had been

programmed to say. Also, if an ignorant person was paid to speak, we would not blame that ignorant person very much. But this time, the person who received the instructions from Mother, was someone who has been to the United States, received a university education and a doctorate degree. Then he came to Korea and became a university professor. On top of this, I think that he is a person who joined our church because he heard Father's words and thought of Father as the Messiah. After joining, he called Father 'Master' and also called him 'Father.' While this person who used to be like that said that he was speaking according to Mother's instructions, he made numerous kinds of inappropriate remarks.

So what is the responsibility of the person who was instructed to make these kinds of remarks? In the world, there are many occasions when we are asked to speak at someone's direction. However, in reality, not many people do exactly what they are instructed to do. The reason is because, depending on the content of those words, it is difficult to say those words literally when they do not match one's own personality, thoughts, or ideas. Also, even if you do speak those words, you will do so while also adding or subtracting your own thoughts.

Because the person who spoke this time is neither a robot nor an ignorant person, but a person with a lot of knowledge, that person has a corresponding responsibility for what he said. Ordinary people will not convey ideas that are not in accordance with their own thoughts and ideas. If despite this one still conveys these ideas, one must rightfully take responsibility for those words. He talked about the person that he took as a teacher, as the Messiah, and

whom he called Father, and yet from what I have heard, there seemed to have been some nonsense included in his words. When you say something like that, just because you say you were instructed to do so does not exempt you from responsibility. Because he did not sort out what he had to sort out, in the end, we have no choice but to say that he did this on his own responsibility. Therefore, he is to be held accountable without any immunity.

Who is considered more important in the world, those who give instructions or those who put them into action? If a person commits a crime under someone else's direction, the punishment is more severe for the person who actually committed the crime than for the person who ordered it. Since that person was in sympathy with those ideas he acted in that way. There is a difference between saying something without action and doing something.

From that point of view, of course, it cannot be said that Mother is not at all responsible for having given the instructions. However, if you have received the instruction and conveyed that content as it was, the person who spoke that content bears a heavier responsibility. If there is something wrong, the person who actually said it should be held primarily responsible.

Try to think of yourself harming another under someone else's instruction. Of course, a person who instructs someone to inflict harm is bad, but shouldn't the person who did the harm directly deserve a greater punishment? It is the same thing. It is wrong to think that you are not responsible for doing something you were instructed to do.

If you listen to what Kim Jinchun said, there are words that

do not make any sense, and there are words that are really disreputable. The content itself has statements that do not fit the theory. Nevertheless, the person who spoke those words because he thought they were correct is responsible for them. So I think you are seriously thinking about this; I also think that we need to think about what to do with such a person.

Marriage Motives of Father and Ms. Choe Seongil

The next problem is the part where Mother appointed Kim Jinchun to say that Father had certain scandals in his background and said that we should get rid of these scandals. One of them was that he said marrying Ms. Choe Seongil before Father met Mother was a scandal that should not be there.

Everyone, what is Father's life motto? He was to become the best filial son before God. And his second goal was to establish the tradition of God in our lives. Then there are many other things including saving all mankind, but in Father's heart, there was always the basic motivation to establish a right relationship with God.

In Father's words, there is a teaching that God is guiding us through our conscience because God dwells in our conscience. Do not all of you have a conscience? And we have God within our conscience. Therefore, what I say to everyone today is for everyone, but it also becomes the word for God in your conscience.

God is a God of justice. Can you lie in front of him? I cannot. Therefore, I am speaking these words with the heart of

speaking in front of God today.

Here we have to know why Father married. Even if human beings complete themselves under their own strength, in order to complete the process of completion, a man and a woman must form a couple as completed human beings, receive God's blessing, and establish a relationship of conjugal love. This is the process of consummation as a complete human being. The first reason Father married was for the consummation of his life as a complete human being.

Father married Ms. Choe Seongil in May 1944. This is before the full-fledged Providential course began. However, Father is a person who knows the Bible well. In the days of Abraham, Lot's wife turned into a pillar of salt because she looked back violating God's command not to look back. Looking back for a moment, does not seem to be particularly significant, does it? But because she violated such a word and did not think it to be especially important, God turned her into a pillar of salt.

Would not Father know that subject matter? It is also found in the words of Father in *The Way of God's Will and Cheon Seong Gyeong*, where Father said that when he does anything, he must, without fail, first discuss it with God. Father said, what if Adam had reported to God what the archangel was saying and had then inquired, "How can I best deal with this?" he would not have fallen. Therefore, Father also said to us, "When making important decisions, do not do so alone, but do it in discussion with God and Father." This is the lesson he taught us.

Would such a person do something that God does not want

him to do, especially an important thing like marriage? At that time Father had just become twenty-four years old. There was no need to hurry to get married. In my case, I was blessed at the age of thirty-three. It was like that for an ordinary person like me who was given a special mission in accordance with God's will.

But did Father have to hurry to get married at the age of twenty-four? If he did, you have to try and think about whether such a marriage was carried out based on Father's independent thoughts.

Marriage is the most important thing in one's lifetime. If Father is the one who came to fulfill God's will, and if he is said to be the Messiah, there is no choice but to conclude that such an important thing could not have been done thoughtlessly.

The Familial Requirements Necessary to Be Born without Original Sin

Then why did Father get married at that time? Jesus and Father were born without original sin. To be born without original sin means to be born as a human being without selfishness, without fallen nature, and without sin.

Of course, because he came to the fallen world, which is a fallen environment, it is different from growing up in the original Garden of Eden. However, since he came without original sin and fallen nature, He overcame all trials and completed himself at only twenty-one years of age.

In the Principle, originally only when you become twenty-one years old are the body and spirit completed together. Accordingly, Jesus and Father were physically and spiritually perfected together at only twenty-one years of age.

In Jesus' time, we have to know the reason why Jesus did not get married. What did Jesus do about his own marriage? Among Father's words, it is said that Jesus three times counseled his mother Mary to marry him. But what did Mary do? At that time, Mary had an uncomfortable relationship with Joseph. They did not even live together because she had conceived and given birth to Jesus.

And when Mary was pregnant, she was in the house of Zechariah. Zechariah called Mary to his house. Although Mary was the maternal cousin ("sister") of Zechariah's wife Elizabeth, the relationship between the two became difficult after Mary became pregnant. Elizabeth watched everything that went on between Zechariah and Mary. So, it became an environment where neither of the families could work together for the sake of Jesus.

If it had been revealed that Jesus had been born because of a relationship between these two families, they would all have died. At that time, if someone committed adultery, they were stoned to death. So, because of that fear, in the end, both families had no choice but to be estranged, and they could not cooperate with each other.

If both families had worked together, Jesus could have easily married. But because of such circumstances, Jesus could not get married.

Did not Mary one day take Jesus to the home of someone holding a wedding ceremony? At that time, the feast had run out of wine and Mary told Jesus to make more wine. At the time, what did Jesus say? He said, "Woman, what have you to do with me?" and rebuked her. Jesus was asking if it made sense to make wine while attending someone else's wedding feast when Mary was not even thinking about marrying him. Although the Bible does not record this event in great detail, all of that subject matter is included.

Jesus wanted to get married, but he started his public life staying unmarried because the two families could not fulfill their responsibility. However, when Father was born, God made him to be born between a husband and wife in a normal family.

Some people said to Father, "There are many brothers in your family with original sin, so how can you alone not have original sin?" They inquire in this way. That is because they do not know the Principle of how to be born without original sin.

Father said that his father Chungbunim Mun Gyeongyu and his mother Chungmonim Kim Gyeonggye were different from ordinary people. Father said that when he was born, he came into this world at the completion level of the growth stage.

When Father was born, God's vertical love fell vertically on top of the horizontal love of his parents and became one, so he was born as a son without original sin. However, when the other siblings were born, God's vertical love did not become one on top of the parent's horizontal love, so they were born with original sin. This is the reason why only Father was born without original sin.

The Intervention of God's Vertical Love at Conception

Father said that love between a husband and wife is planar, horizontal love, whereas God's love is vertical, longitudinal love. When you are blessed and fall in love as a married couple, God's vertical love comes to you. You are enveloped in that love. If that happens, then sons and daughters of God without original sin will emerge.

So, God's vertical love was present in the place where Zechariah and Mary loved. Therefore, Jesus was born as a son without original sin. Similarly, in Father's family, too, when the moment for the conception of Father, which had been decided upon by God, arrived, God's vertical love descended on the place where Father's parents loved each other, thus enabling Father to be born as a son without original sin.

Even in our blessed families, the families of our unblessed siblings give birth to sons and daughters with original sin, so why is it that only we who are blessed can give birth to sons and daughters without original sin? It is for the same reason.

According to Father's words, all religions hoped to find one man. They said that they were looking for the one person, the Messiah. Therefore, Jesus came through Judaism, and Father came through Christianity. This is because Judaism and Christianity are the central religions.

It is said that Maitreya Buddha comes from Buddhism also, but he did not come through Buddhism but through Christianity.

Nevertheless, the Buddhist spirit world sees Father as the Maitreya Buddha.

Everyone, please see the autobiography of Elder Pastor Choe Dosun of the 72 couples' families. At the age of seventeen, on the basis of his mother's devotion to Buddhism, he also became a Buddhist convert. Then he received a revelation that he would meet the Maitreya Buddha, and the Maitreya Buddha he saw at that time looked just like Father. The Buddhist spirit world showed Father to Buddhists through such a process. So when I saw that fact, I said that Christianity and Buddhism had become one in the spirit world.

Pastor Choe Dosun was a Buddhist, but since childhood, he knew that Father was coming as the Maitreya Buddha, and when he saw him in person, he immediately realized that it was him. After receiving this revelation, he met Father in person later. The figure he had used to see earlier as Maitreya Buddha was in fact Father. All religions had the same hope, and it was Christianity that fulfilled it. Since only one person is sent into this world, God sent Father to the representative religion, Christianity.

Married Couple Love Completes the Maturation of the Individual

God is well aware that Jesus was born and suffered in the midst of difficult circumstances between Zechariah and Mary. However, the time of Jesus was an age when it was difficult to find a spiritually high-level married couple. At the end of the Old Testament era,

the spiritual level of human beings could only rise to the level of the completion of the formation stage, so God had no option but to search separately for a man and a woman of a high spiritual level. This is why God had no choice but to search for Zechariah and Mary separately. At that time, Zechariah was a high-ranking priest, and Mary was also a woman who had risen to the level of being able to speak directly with God, as can be seen in the Gospel of Mary in the Apocrypha. This is the reason why these two people were chosen. The Second Advent, however, marked the end of the New Testament era and the beginning of a new era in which the spiritual level of humans could rise to the level of the completion of the growth period. So, because God was able to choose a family in which the couple had reached the completion level of the growth stage together, He permitted Father to be born into a normal family environment to a formally married couple.

In this way, Father was born without original sin and grew up to become twenty-one years old. Jesus did not have a proper family foundation, but Father's family is a normal family, so what kind of problem will he have? As such, a normal family forms relationships with other families, and one woman comes to be chosen. She was Ms. Choe Seongil. Father, married this person in May 1944, just before the liberation of Korea, and they had a son.

According to Father's words, even though he said that he had accomplished individual completion at twenty-one years of age, this was not the end. The end happens when a couple who has received God's blessing becomes one in love. At that time, completion comes to an end.

Even though we strive to complete ourselves, we cannot be completed without becoming a blessed couple that becomes one through love. This is how couples can become one in a family and fulfill God's love. This cannot be achieved without a couple and a family. Completion is blessed when a couple gets married and becomes one through love; God's vertical love is present with the horizontal love of the couple, and as the three persons of God, husband, and wife become one completely, individual completion is consummated.

So, in the past in Korea, unmarried people were not treated as adults. No matter how old they were. If they did not take a wife or husband in marriage, they were treated like a child. This was because of the meaning of marriage. There are many traditional Korean rituals that are close to the traditions of the Kingdom of God, and this is one of them.

The Providential Path That Must Be Followed and Making a Successor

Second, Father conducted the Providence to become one with Kim Baekmun's group immediately after liberation. From October 1945 to April 1946, Father joined and stayed with the Kim Baekmun group. He lived in Sangdo-dong, Seoul, and his headquarters was in Paju, Gyeonggi Province.

However, on January 6, 1946, Pastor Kim Baekmun received a revelation. Fingers appeared on the wall of his house in Paju in

the middle of the night, and the characters “March 2 is the day when death and creation split” were written.

And on March 2, Father attended the meeting. But at 11:30 am in the morning, Jesus appeared. Immediately after that, Pastor Kim Baekmun entered, laid his hands on Father’s head and testified with a loud voice that he was the one who came in the glory of King Solomon. At that time, not only Pastor Kim Baekmun gave the testimony, but three other women also gave the same testimony.

However, Pastor Kim Baekmun did not follow Father even after he testified in that way. In the past, John the Baptist stood in the same position when even after witnessing to Jesus at the Jordan River; he did not follow Jesus. Because he was the witness, he thought that it was over because he had testified. In the past, even John the Baptist thought that he had fulfilled his responsibility by simply testifying to Jesus.

God could have given a revelation to John the Baptist that he should continue to serve and follow the Lord and live with Him, but he could not do that. This was because of the human portion of responsibility, that is, this was an area of responsibility that had to be judged by John’s own wisdom. In the case of Pastor Kim Baekmun also, after testifying, God did not teach him that he had to follow Father and dedicate his life to attending him. This was a division of responsibility whereby the person who had testified had to decide what to do in accordance with his own wisdom. So, after that, Father waited a long time to see if there was any change in his behavior. But there was no change at all.

Then as it happened, a revelation from God was given to

some of the members of that group. It was a revelation that said, “You have followed Kim Baekmun, but from now on, you must follow Mr. Mun.” But from that point, the church split.

Father’s purpose in going to that church was not with the intention to tear the church apart and ruin it. Father intended to make a new start for the whole church by it becoming one with him and achieving the Will together. But what if it became divided? If there was division, there would be confusion and conflicts, and God cannot carry on the Providence in a place where there is that kind of conflict. So Father left that place at the beginning of April 1946.

On April 2, 1946, Seongjin Nim was born. At that time, it was difficult to obtain rice in South Korea. Father started a family and had a baby, but there was no rice in the house. So he went to Baekcheon, Hwanghae Province in order to get rice. At that time, he bought one doe of rice (1.6 kg) in that region and was taking it back to his home.

But then, God sent down instructions to Father to go north. That day was May 27. Father walked on foot from there going north just like that. He left immediately without notifying his family.

He left in that way and arrived in Pyeongyang on June 6. From this point on, Father’s North Korean providence began.

Father has spoken about the situation at that time. Father made and gave his son the name “Seongjin.” Father’s words about this only appear in one place. At that time, North Korea was under the sovereignty of Satan. So if he went there, he did not know what would happen to him. So he said, “If I die, in order for my son to follow behind me and fulfill the will, I made and gave him

the name Seongjin.”

In the end, in case of an emergency, he had to make a successor and go, so his wife gave birth to a son. Therefore, the purpose of Father getting married was twofold. One was for consummating the process of completion, and the other was to give birth to a successor who could continue on the way of the providence. For these two purposes, God made Father marry. After this, the Providence of North Korea unfolds, but today, I will only speak until this point.

Let Us Get To Know Father Correctly and Reveal the Truth

The point of today's talk is to explain why Father got married. It was never done out of a selfish or personal desire. If that was the case, how could he be called the Messiah? If it was not God's Will but just Father doing as he pleased, then he could not be the Messiah.

But everything is revealed by God, and for Father, this was the start of the North Korean Providence. If at that time this was a mistake, Father would have lost his qualification to be the Messiah, and if that was the case what was he sent to North Korea to do? If he was not the Messiah, God would not have sent him to North Korea. You need to know, therefore, that Father married and did everything depending on God's direction. Recently, it is being said that because Father married Ms. Choe Seongil before marrying Mother, he does not have the qualifications to be the Messiah. But

if Father violated God's will at that time and married of his own volition, could there have been such a great Second Advent phenomenon after Korea's liberation? On March 2, 1946, Jesus appeared at an assembly at the Israel Monastery in Paju, and how would it have been possible for Pastor Kim Baekmun to have testified about Father? Also, it would not have been possible to establish the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity on May 1, 1954. Furthermore, True Parents' Holy Marriage in April 1960 would also have been impossible. Moreover, after that, the 3 blessed families, 36 blessed families and all the blessed families of today could never have appeared. If Father's marriage had happened in a way contrary to God's Will, neither Father nor the Unification Church itself would have existed.

Father stated, "I lived on earth until I was ninety-two years old. Of course, I always worked for the Providence, but I taught day and night to give the Word of God to our family members." How shocking would it be to see people who he taught like that, his sons and daughters, lose their faith and shake because of what people say?

But that is our reality, even among our elder family members. Yes, we are like that. We have to reflect on ourselves. If you say that your heart has been shaken by such things, you already have a problem. Being shaken in your faith is the same as believing that Father is not the Messiah. Then, Father becomes a person who has nothing to do with God or God's Will. So we need to know the identity of Father correctly.

Does Mother say you should know the truth nowadays,

right? You have to know right away that which is called the Truth. She said to know the Truth and spread it. These are the words Father said before Mother's words. Father said, "Know the Truth and reveal the Truth. Did you not know everything when you were blessed as 36 blessed families? Why don't you say those words?"

When Father chose Mother, there was a female family member named Choe. She was a candidate. But the same thing happened as when Satan took Eve. Satan worked like that, and the woman left and went out. So, a person named Yun was appointed as a second candidate. Do you know who held the second forty-day evangelist retreat in Yamok, Gyeonggi Province? Father did that to raise up that person. So she was ready, but there was a process of making a vow at the end.

"No matter what happens, will you practice absolute faith, absolute love, and absolute obedience to Father?" This was the final question that Father asked. "Yes, I will do that 100 per cent." She had to reply in that way. But, unfortunately, the woman did not make this vow to do that until the very end. So she was rejected. Then the chosen one was Mother, and Mother did make that promise.

So, will everything be as promised? If you make a promise, you must keep it. If you look at the video from today's church, it seems that Father is with you. It is said that Father and Mother became one in this. But everyone has to take a closer look to see if they really are one. If the picture comes out as one, is that evidence of oneness? You should examine Mother's words and actions. We must understand why our church has fallen into

confusion.

I know more than that. That is because we, 36 families, feel deeply the responsibility to reveal the truth. What will we say to Father when we go to the spirit world? If he asks, "Why didn't you say anything?" What would your answer be? Does it make any sense that someone did not speak out because they were afraid? So I think we should proceed in a proper way. In particular, I think that now is not the time, but such a time is gradually coming.

4. The Enemies of God -Atheism, Materialism, Evolutionism

It is a pleasure to meet you today.

Public Opinion Supporting Korea's Possession of the Atomic Bomb

I watched the news this morning (2/11/2022) while eating breakfast. It was the news that the *New York Times* had published an article saying that if South Korea possessed an atomic bomb this would help Korea, the United States, and world peace.

There is a pair of professors in the United States who have done a lot of research on international issues. These professors wrote in the newspaper, "Korea must declare that it has the qualifications and authority to make an atomic bomb in order to withdraw from the NPT (Nuclear Non-Proliferation Treaty) and defend its country. Even if the United States and South Korea promote it, the world will not oppose it." After that, there has been a lot of public opinion in

various places that Korea should have an atomic bomb.

In the past, President Park Chunghee was going to develop an atomic bomb. I cannot go into all the details here, but the fact is that because of it, President Park died early. It was not developed at that time because the United States refused. But now there have been many changes.

The Blessing of the First Three Pairs of Spirit Persons

Another thing I want to tell you today is what Father did when he went to the spirit world. You too will also be very curious. Before Father passed away, the spirit world was in the midst of confusion. Change began to come from the time Father became True Parents in 1960 and began to make a blessed family on earth.

The Providence of salvation for people on earth began with the blessing of three couples on April 16, 1960, five days after the Parents' holy marriage on April 11, 1960. However, it was thirty-five years later that he gave the blessing for spirit persons in the spirit world. In other words, August 24, 1995 was the first time that he gave the blessing to his parents, Chungbunim Mun Gyeongyu and Chungmonim Kim Gyeonggye, Mother's parents, Daebunim Han Seungun and Daemonim Hong Sunae, and Father's older brother, Daehyeong Nim Mun Yongsu and his wife. Prior to that, there was no one who had a history of liberating spirit persons within Satan's realm in the spirit world.

Although Jesus came to the earth as the Messiah 2,000

years ago, because he did not become True Parents, he could not liberate spirit persons or save earthly humans. He grew to the completion level of the growth stage spiritually, but a complete eradication of original sin has not been done. Therefore, there was no fundamental change in the spirit world before or after he came. After the fall of the first human ancestors, all human beings have had original sin, so all spirits who have come to this earth before Father came are within Satan's realm. There is no one within God's realm. God did not create hell, or a middle spirit world, or paradise in the spirit world. Heaven is the only spirit world created by God. But since no one has entered Heaven, it is empty.

After Jesus, only God and Jesus are qualified to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. But, since there are only two, what are they going to do? Someone must enter and live together with them, but what kind of meaning is there in that when there is no one to enter. In the end, not even those two could enter.

However, this started to change; Father established blessed families on this earth, and as those families went to the spirit world, spirit persons without original sin were created for the first time. In this way, God's realm of authority in the spirit world began. If there are living sons and daughters of God, then the spirit world of God's authority comes into being.

In the past, there was not even one human without original sin, so the entire spirit world was under the realm of Satan. However, Father started the blessing, and as the sons and daughters of our blessed families without original sin went into the spirit world, the spirit world of God's authority began. So, sons and

daughters of God must arise, then the spirit world of God's authority can also arise; if there are no sons and daughters, there cannot be a spirit world under God's authority.

And thirty-five years later, Father blessed three couples so that these families could enter the spirit world of God's authority. This was the start for Father to bless spirit persons in the spirit world.

The Era of Opening the Blessing of the Spirit World and the Blessing of Ancestors

After that, it is said that when Father blessed 40 million couples in Washington on November 29, 1997, he blessed 1.6 billion spirit-person couples. Then who are these spirits?

Father said on May 1, 1999, "The 1.6 billion couples who were blessed at that time are young people aged fourteen or younger who died without getting married and those who died when they were babies on the earth. I blessed them because they grew up and reached maturity in the spirit world."

Then why would Satan permit that blessing? They have no descendants. When you bless spirit persons who have descendants, those spirit persons can influence the descendants. However, since baby spirits without descendants have grown up and become adults, even if they are blessed, they cannot influence earthly people. That is why Father could bless them freely. In this way, Father blessed 1.6 billion couples, and suddenly 1.6 billion spirit-person couples

came into existence within the realm of God's authority.

On the first day of December 1997, right after the blessing ceremony for the 40 million couples, Father proclaimed the opening of the blessing of the spirit world. And on May 15, 1998, the following year, he proclaimed the liberation of hell and the opening of Heaven. On the June 2, it was said that we should create a training center to educate the spirit persons in the spiritual world.

Against this background, on June 13, when Parents gave the first blessing for 360 million couples in New York, blessing ceremonies were held for 4.6 billion spirit-person couples, five great saints, three great devils, and dozens of couples combining persons in the spiritual and physical worlds to unify these two realms. So these too, were the same. The 4.6 billion pairs of spirit persons were sent to God's realm of authority by blessing spirit persons who had grown up in the spirit world as people who had not committed any sins against themselves, such as babies and young unmarried people. This was preparation for Father to bless those ancestors who had descendants.

As early as February 22, 1968, when Father blessed 430 families in Korea, he invited Mr. Yu Gwangryeol, the cultural director of the Korea Association, and Ms. Oyama Gunja, the daughter of a Korean-Japanese, Mr. Oyama, to participate. This couple served as a bridge to enable the blessing of Korean and Japanese people. And by allowing President and Ms. Kuboki to participate and receive the blessing, a bridge was built that enabled the blessing of Japanese people in Japan.

In the same way, the dozens of pairs of blessings, which were centered on the five great saints and the three great devils, which were given by blessing spirits in the spirit world with people on earth, built a bridge that enabled the blessing ancestors who have descendants. In doing this, Father opened the way for us as descendants to be able to liberate and bless our ancestors.

When did this road open? Father allowed the liberation of ancestors from February 12, 1999, and started the ancestor blessing ceremony on December 12 of that year. From this point on, he made it possible to do the work of liberation and blessing of ancestors in the spirit world in earnest. Thus he opened a highway that enabled the spirit persons in the spirit world to be completely saved.

So, on May 1, 1999, Father explained that since 1997 he had blessed 1.6 billion couples, 4.6 billion couples, 10 billion couples, and 12 billion couples of spirit persons who grew up in the spirit world as babies and unmarried boys and girls. Suddenly in this way, the number of spirit persons under God's authority greatly increased. In the past when Satan was watching, God could not take away even a single person to his side, but since Father blessed billions or even tens of billions, Satan was shaken. Thus, on March 21, 1999, Satan's natural submission occurred.

The Work of Earthly Cooperation with Ancestors in the Spirit World

What else did Father say? He said that by doing this in the

spiritual realm, in the future, all the spirits will be sent to the earth to protect the families of their descendants and work will take place to help the Providence to be completed. In fact, it is not an easy task for earthly humans to complete on their own.

When we witness, the most difficult thing is to teach these four things: that God exists, that there is a spirit world, that we have a spirit body, and that we are to go to the afterlife. Yes, because they are all invisible. Can you see God? Can you see the spirit world? Do you not know that you even have your own spirit body? Because it's hard to inform people about these facts, witnessing is difficult. However, if our ancestors were to come and live with their descendants on earth, helping them to complete their descendants and helping their descendants go on their way, what would happen? The earthly Providence is becoming easier.

Everyone, the conservative-liberal camp has won this election. In the future, it will be very difficult for the communist camp to have a chance to come to power. Why is that? Now, Father in the spirit world has arranged all the tribes. The time is coming soon to send those spirit persons to earth. No matter how hard the humans on earth try to do as they please, they will not be able to do so. Even the winning of this election is a result of Father's help.

The conservative-liberal camp was victorious because many spirit persons were sent from the spirit world to the earth and they cooperated and worked together. This is what I prayed to Father for because I do not know well what Father is doing in the spirit world. I prayed, "If God and Father do not work for us somehow,

Korea will have no destiny.” But, that is what was accomplished.

So what will happen in the future? Now, if a new government comes in and liquidates the old things and does well, because the spirit persons of the spirit world will come and help, there will be no opportunity for Satan’s side to take power.

See and Know Who the Enemies of God Are

Earlier, Dr. Son Dae O said that even among our family members, there those who have joined the left-wing camp and helped them. You can get a rough idea of what kind of people leftists are just by looking at their physiognomy.

Why do our members not know how to distinguish between good and evil? Until now, evil has dominated good. Everything leftists say is a lie, but the reason they look at things that way is because their eyes and ears are wrong. Borrowing Father’s expression, “their eyes are blind though they look perfect,” which means that they have internal rotten eyes behind unseeing, perfect looking eyes.

So we need to get this right. What should we do to get it right? We are learning the critique of communism and unification ideology, but these theories are difficult. But there is a simple way to know. We just have to ask ourselves, who is God’s enemy? This is all you need to know.

The enemies of God are those who believe in atheism, an ideology that claims there is no God. There are materialists who

believe that mind comes out of matter, evolutionists who believe that life was not created but evolved from microbes and that humans also came into being in that way, and there are also those who engage in and promote sexual immorality.

They are truly God's enemies, and since we are God's sons and daughters, they are also our enemies. That is why, by knowing only what a person is claiming, it becomes clear whether he is our enemy or not.

Forces against God

After Jesus came and died on the cross, Satan made up the theory that there is no God. But, if there is no God, then there is no spirit world. Then Satan himself will disappear. So, while Satan is hiding his own identity, he is also saying that there is no God.

Satan does not want to reveal his identity. Somehow, he goes out saying that there is no Satan. In reality, Satan is in control of the spirit world, so wouldn't it be safer for him to do this? While doing this, he makes us believe in atheism and also in materialism.

What is materialism? It means that the mind comes from matter. If matter is not from the mind, and the mind is from matter, the assertion that God created the material world is without foundation. If our human mind also comes from matter, the theory is established that it does not matter if there is no God.

Then Darwin appeared and devised the theory of evolution.

Doesn't the theory of evolution say that lower animals evolved to become humans? So the theory of evolution emerged to deny God's creation.

These three are the enemies of God. Sexual immorality can also be added to these three. The family system is a major obstacle to communizing the world. That is why Satan is insisting on the promotion of sexual immorality in order to destroy the family. Sexual immorality, therefore, should also be added to atheism, materialism, and evolutionism as one of the enemies of God.

Therefore, we can immediately know who the enemy of God is. Anyone who advocates atheism, materialism, and evolution, or who supports sexual immorality, is an enemy of God. What are such a person's thoughts? If you know this, you know that they are Satan. Can you go along with Satan?

Even among our family members, there are people who say that they work with such people just because they look good, because they did not know this. They are ignorant of even this simple thing. Does it make sense to those who have been in the Unification Church for several decades? If we are sons and daughters of God, are not Father's enemies our enemies? Simple. Now we need to go and wake up our minds immediately. So, of course, we have to teach difficult theories, but we need to teach these simple things first, and use them as a benchmark. From this perspective, we need to make sure we know who to partner with and who is in the enemy's position. This is the most basic thing we need to do.

Main Causes of the Confusion in the Unification Family and Their Solutions

Within us right now, there are so many problems that confusion is taking place. Why does such confusion arise? When there are two owners, confusion arises. What if there are two owners in the same household, what happens? Confusion and conflicts arise.

We know that there is only one God. The Principle states that the one who is the Masculine Subject is God. But then the theory about God the Mother came out. Originally, there was only God the Father, but when God the Mother appeared, there were two gods.

Two presidents emerged in Venezuela, and the country was at one time split in two. In this way, when there are two sovereigns in a country, there will be a split.

Therefore, it is said that there is only one Lord in this universe, God, in other words, the one and only God (Yulsin 唯一神). This is the definition of God and is the standard by which God's authority is established. There is only one God. And it can be said that God's wife is the consort (bi 妃) of God. Even kings and presidents have wives. The wife is not the king, but the queen consort, and the wife of the president is not the president, but the first lady.

A king or president is also a father when he goes home. Even in the state, when referring to the state's parents, the king becomes the state and the wife becomes the mother of the state.

That is the language used when viewing the nation's people as children. When God also comes into the family, he becomes a Father, and God's wife becomes a Mother. When we see all mankind in the universe as children, God and God's Wife become our Heavenly Parents.

However, from the position of the supreme decision maker of the universe, God is the only God, God's Wife is God's Consort (bi 妃), that is, the Wife of God. We have to understand this properly and get it right. If you just fix this, all the confusion will be gone immediately. Simple.

Then why did this confusion happen? Because the "only begotten daughter" theory appeared. In the Bible, is there a verse that says God will send His only begotten daughter? No matter how much you may search, there is nothing about this. Where is the only begotten daughter in the Bible?

The Principle of God's Providence is that God does not conduct the Providence without revealing it beforehand. If God does not let us know, how will humans know? Therefore, God conducts the Providence and teaches us beforehand, by word or by other means, the Providential work that he is going to do.

If He is going to send His only begotten daughter, it must be in the Bible that He will send her. And just as the Providence of the Old Testament era provided the foundation for the sending of Jesus, there certainly must be a providential foundation in the Bible for the sending of the only begotten daughter without original sin. However, in the Bible, there is not even a single story about such a Providence. So there is no way an only begotten daughter could be

sent. If the Biblical foundation is not there, if someone makes such an assertion, it is nothing more than a groundless claim.

You Must Know Satan's Strategy and Tactics

What is Satan's weapon? If you look at the Communist Party, the representative of Satan, the basis of their strategies and tactics are lies and violence. Listen to what the leftists are saying. It is a lie every day. Lying is a strategic tactic. It is not because they do not know the facts, it is because it is a strategic tactic. They lie and make people believe the lie, after that, they use violence and force. Seizing power in this way is the first condition of their work.

Those people have their own beliefs, which is one world communization with a satanic figure as the head. It is a belief in Satan. Whether they know it or not, the proponents of atheism, materialism, and evolution are all centered on creating a dictatorship with lies and violence. Their ultimate desire and goal is to rule the entire world with an armed dictatorship.

The Communist Party is doing that now, right? God's ideal world will come only when we know this, and crush it and discard it. So, Father said that the Kingdom of Heaven on earth will not be achieved, if the spirits do not cooperate when they come to earth. Now the time will come.

Time of Earthly History and Father's Organization of the Spirit World

Father went to the spirit world and straightened out everything in the spirit world. In past history, there were not only the events in the Old Testament as we know them, but there were many more events. Everything like that was all arranged by Father.

How do you arrange it? If there is a criminal incident, the cause, path, and result of the incident must be revealed, and if the perpetrator is not penalized for it, then the case will not be resolved. If there are criminals on the earth, you have to catch the criminals and root them all out from beginning to end, right? The case must be closed only when the criminal is arrested and punished after ascertaining the cause, path, and result.

Likewise, the Providence of God is also like that. A stage ends only when the cause, path, and result of every incident has been investigated and punished. In this way, Father corrected all the past history. This is never easy work. Even doing this alone takes a great deal of time.

Because Father has gone to the spirit world, order has now been established in the spirit world. If Father did not liberate hell and open the gates of heaven, it would not have happened. It is also Father taking the lead in the cosmic expansion of the blessing.

It is because of Father's work that the spirit world is prepared to come to the earth in the future and be able to cooperate. If Father were not in the spirit world, there is no one

else who could do this.

In this way, Father is doing all the work he is going to do. We do not know when it will be, but in the future, Father will come to the earth to work. This is because he has been too busy in the spirit world up until now, but in the future, the time will come when Father will take overall leadership of the work on the earth too.

What Blessed Families Should Do Now

So you do not have to worry too much. The question is whether we are on the right path or going wrong, this is important. It is about how you yourself are going and what you are going to do.

Should we not all be complete? This must happen through being a blessed family. We must be completed through marital love. There is no completion without the love of the couple in the family.

We are God-centered families establishing four-position foundations over three generations. Past, present, and future grandparents, parents, and grandchildren must appear twice. It is the responsibility of the parents of blessed families to make our family members the ones who love God the most, who love God's people and are determined to risk their lives to protect the Kingdom of God.

This is what our blessed families should do. Therefore, we cannot criticize others without doing our own work. First of all, we

have to work hard for what we are doing. Knowing that it is the mission of the blessed families to become families who are able to have a free pass to everywhere in the spirit world, and for that, we need to go forward with a positive attitude.

And did not Father tell us about the tribal messiah providence? When we go to the spirit world, we have to bring a gift, but what would that gift be? By saving people's lives, we make many sons and daughters of our own faith, and these become gifts that God rejoices over as time goes on.

Of course, we will have to raise our own sons and daughters like that, but we must keep in mind that the mission of our blessed families is not only for our own sons and daughters, but also to make many people around us like that and prepare them as our gift and present them before God.

5. Speaking out about How Kim Jinchun Is Destroying the “True Parent Ideal”

I heard that a man named Kim Jinchun gave a lecture tour in five major regions from March 21 to April 7, 2022, at the special command of Mother Han Hak Ja. The participants included pastors and their wives, the official employees of various FFWPU organizations, elder pastor association members, and so on. It is said that, the event was also conducted private for general church family members.

Fortunately, the content of the lecture at Jeonju Church on March 22 was uploaded as a YouTube video, so I was able to find out about the content. The video was then taken down a few days later for some reason, but the video material will remain somewhere.

However, on April 17, ten days after the lecture tour was over, at the “Cheon Il Guk 10th Annual Cheon Il Guk Leaders General Assembly,” about 500 representatives from all over the world and the Korean Family Federation’s leading executives were in attendance; at Mother’s special instruction, all other originally

planned events were canceled, and from April 19, they received education with special lectures from Kim Jinchun for two days and also held an all-night prayer vigil.

The theme of the education and prayer was “to liberate Father by removing the shameful scandals attached to him” and it was said that “the truth of the only begotten daughter should be revealed and the status and value of the ‘first coming of the one with no original sin’ should be revealed to the world.”

Kim Jinchun’s lecture, which was held privately except for the audience, must have been more verbose compare to the one he had given during the five major regions lecture tour. Fortunately, the content that he personally revealed for about fifteen minutes in his own voice about the intention behind the lecture he gave are available to the public. The full text may be found at the end of this section for your reference.

What is shocking is that Kim Jinchun is consistent in his attitude to represent and convey Mother’s intentions from beginning to end. If he confessed all those unprincipled, anti-providential, gossip littered stories as a confession of his own faith, there is no reason for me to strongly comment like this. As I listened to this content and looked at the recorded video, I was unable to suppress the stern voice of Father crying out within me, so I wrote this article.

Of course, before I wrote this article last June 16, the International Headquarters’ Director-General Yun Yeongho and Chief of the Secretary-General Jeong Wonju invited the 36 Family

Association members to a luncheon. At that event, I pointed out in a clear and resolute tone the anti-Providential irrationality of Kim Jinchun's lecture content. And while expressing strong opposition to such lectures being given on a large scale, I gave a strict warning of how serious the after-effects would be on the church.

Among the contents of Kim Jinchun's lecture, references related to the separation of parents is a hodgepodge of strange talk that distorts and manipulates facts and truth to the extent that none of them correspond to the Principle and Words that Father has revealed. It is not worthwhile to respond to all of them one by one, but I am going to mention only three or four that contain the most profound distortions.

Please note that the quotations in italics are from Kim Jinchun's lecture, and the contents following the quotations are my understanding of his meaning.

[Kim Jinchun] *From Mother's point of view, the position of Father, who had inherited the mission of the Second Advent Messiah, should have been in accord with the Principle, and that was really a pity. Therefore, Father, having such a "tail" (i.e. scandal or unprincipled mistake) attached to him, was not in a position to determine the bride at the time of Holy Marriage in 1960.*

We have received a lot of education until now that says that Father chooses a woman from among the fallen women, and for seven

years, Father, the Lord of the Second Advent, educates and re-creates Mother. If you look at the contents of what I said earlier, you realize that this is not the case.

This is a draw-dropping statement from the beginning. It means that Father, whom Jesus established as his successor, has gone down an unprincipled path that does not conform to the Principle, and it is not Father who God caused to arise as the Second Advent Messiah. Father, having such an unprincipled “tail” attached to him, was not qualified to choose and determine the bride at the time of the Holy Marriage in 1960.

Although Father, at the time, did not have the qualifications to choose a seventeen-year-old woman, Han Hak Ja, as the bride of the Second Advent Messiah, the historical truth is that the Holy Marriage Ceremony was accomplished in that way.

As it happens, he is professing that the history of the Providence of Restoration through Indemnity, whereby Father proclaimed God’s Day on January 1, 1968 through a seven-year course of perfecting Eve, that is to say, the Bride after the Holy Marriage, was complete nonsense and invalid. Certainly, if the first step was wrong, then after that, the entire Providence of the Parents would have ended up being torn down. This assertion by Kim Jinchun is an act of tearing down and digging up the very foundation stone of the Unification Family.

Everyone, how do you come to accept that lectures like this have been officially implemented in the name of education at the World Leaders' General Assembly? Indeed, this was a presumptuous outrage that was concocted to support Mother by falsely accusing and denigrating Father, while also ruining Mother's existence. It is an act of self-harm and suicide of the Unification Church. In a word, it cannot but be a satanic act that destroys the ideal of True Parents. At this point, I cannot confirm whether this is Mother's will as Kim Jinchun asserts, but since the content came from Kim Jinchun's mouth, Kim Jinchun must surely take responsibility for uttering these words.

Sun Myung Moon, the Second Advent Bridegroom and Father, in obedience to the Will of God that comes by proceeding with the Principles of the Providence of creation, fall, and restoration, also revealed and practiced the work of the Providence by overcoming the cross of indemnity for the salvation of a desperate humankind! As a living witness who has seen and heard the truth while participating in this from the beginning, I will absolutely not tolerate such impure acts of destroying the True Parents' Holy Marriage. About this unprincipled, anti-Providence rebellion, I will mention only a few words without even quoting the Principle, the Word, and the Bible.

Following the fall of Eve, who created a reciprocal base for the unprincipled love of the archangel Lucifer, and after the fall of Adam through the temptation of the fallen Eve, whereby humankind

became subject to Satan's unprincipled dominion, God began the Providence of salvation, that is, the Providence of restoration. The Providence of restoration that separates us from Satan and subjugates him is the Providence of re-creation. Re-creation develops through the Providence of restoration through indemnity based on the principles and order of the Principle of Creation. That is to say, it is the process of re-creating Adam and Eve, the first human ancestors who had fallen and had original sin, as the original human beings before the Fall. In the Bible, when creating human beings, God first created the male Adam, the subject, and established Adam as the ruler of all things and had Adam give names to all things (Genesis 2:19), and it is recorded that He took a rib from Adam's body and made Eve and gave Eve as a spouse to help Adam.

Because Adam and Eve, who were in relationship with the Principle of Creation, fell, God first of all developed the course that established the completed Adam without original sin through the Providence of lineage restoration through restoring (recreating) Adam. Therefore, after 4,000 years of the Providence of restoration through indemnity, Jesus was allowed to come as the Savior and Messiah. That Jesus (Adam) was to restore (re-create) Eve (the bride and spouse) and establish the position of True Parents. Among the unmarried women contemporaries of the "Eve" who would become Jesus' spouse, if there were persons who could become one in front of Jesus through absolute faith, absolute love, and absolute obedience, any one of them could have become a qualified bride-to-be whom Jesus could have chosen. That was the

qualification and condition to become the bride of the Messiah.

To introduce such a concept as an “only begotten daughter” born without original sin through the Providence of restoration of lineage, just like Jesus, is unprincipled idle talk that neither exists in the Principle of Creation nor in the Principle of restoration. Therefore, nowhere in the Bible does it say that an only begotten daughter without original sin is coming. Since Eve fell by the unprincipled false love of the archangel, when she comes to the place where she can receive the principled true love of the completed Adam and Messiah, Eve will be cleansed of her original sin and be restored (re-created) as a growth stage completed bride. After the Holy Marriage, the bride becomes completely one with Jesus through absolute faith, absolute love, and absolute obedience, and advances through the completion stage and restores her position as True Mother. This is the framework of God’s providential work of salvation that runs through the Principles of creation, fall, and restoration that Father revealed. Kim Jinchun is denying and destroying all these Principles.

The Second Advent Bridegroom, the Lord of the Second Advent, in order to achieve without doubt the completion of the True Parent ideal, chooses a bride and restores (recreates) her according to the same formula and principle of the Providence of restoration as Jesus did, and establishes the status of True Parents. Therefore, the Lord of the Second Advent is responsible for finding and re-creating a bride from among his unmarried women

contemporaries, and there are no qualifications or conditions for these unmarried women who are in the position of a bride to do this or that. Therefore, when choosing a bride at the time of the Parents' Holy Marriage, there was a procedure for receiving and confirming the vow pledging absolute faith, absolute love, and absolute obedience to True Father of the Second Coming to the end, no matter what difficulties the bride candidates might have faced.

There are ample sayings related to this, but I will quote only one.

Then what kind of Jesus is the Jesus born like that? God created the heavens and the earth in six days. He created all things in five days, and on the sixth day He created Adam, and Jesus is the same person as that Adam. In this way, Jesus is the second Adam, or is named the later Adam. He is called the true Adam who did not fall. Since God created Adam in the beginning and centered on that Adam He created Eve, He had to establish the later Eve centering on this later Adam, but He was unable to establish this. Who has to establish Eve? Adam must establish this. Because Adam failed to take responsibility when Eve fell, Adam must find and establish the lost Eve. In the indemnity principle, there is no forgiveness.

That is why Jesus came and claimed, "I am

the bridegroom and you are the bride.” God set the course of 4,000 years of history and He made the whole world adorn itself as a bride. Therefore, because Jesus, who came to this earth, chose an individual cosmic Mother and received her as a bride, it was Jesus’ mission to restore a new family, tribe, nation, and world to establish the Kingdom of Heaven centering on that Father and Mother.” (*Anthology of Words*, Volume 17, pp. 190-191, “Complete Restoration”, December 18, 1966, Former Headquarters [Jeonbonbul Church]).

The part of Kim Jinchun’s lecture presented before squarely denies the Words and Principles of the content above that was quoted from Father’s speech “Complete Restoration,” and what else could it be but evil gossip attempting to destroy both Parents that has no foundation or roots anywhere.

[Kim Jinchun] *So Father has to meet the only begotten daughter, since the Lord of the Second Advent, the Second Advent’s mission is, what Jesus could not do, to meet the only begotten daughter and have the feast of the Lamb. The most important thing Father had wanted to do was meet the only begotten daughter, and the feast of the Lamb was the most important thing. When looked at from that perspective, considering the essence*

of the only begotten daughter and Mother's essential role, ideal and value, I wish Father had done better at that time. That was rather regrettable. Mother spoke about details like that.

Kim Jinchun's content in this paragraph is expressed in a circuitous manner while telling a meandering story. However, if you listen to the entire contents of his lecture, the Lord of the Second Advent, Father, who was born in a body that had original sin, and who also found the bride, Hak Ja Han, who came as the only begotten daughter of the first coming without original sin, he said Father should have cleared up all his flaws. Also, he is laying out and spreading vague expressions of absurd and nonsensical gossip, claiming that before the Holy Marriage, it was forbidden to marry another woman and that because Father ignored this, he went to North Korea and was sentenced to Heungnam labor camp to indemnify this mistake. Kim Jinchun is spouting out a story that makes one naturally choke with incredulity. To educate world leaders by distorting providential facts and truths in this way is unbelievable, but this has been the reality.

We cannot know by looking at a person whether that person is a person without original sin or a person with original sin. It is determined by the absence or presence of original sin and knowing whether He is the Messiah or not. If that person is the Messiah, then that person is without original sin; if he is not the Messiah, that person has original sin. By sending the Messiah

without original sin to this earth as God's representative, God converts fallen mankind from a position of original sin to a position without original sin, thereby carrying out the Providence of salvation of humankind. Therefore, knowing whether or not Father has no original sin is knowing whether or not Father is the Messiah.

Because almost all of our family members who joined in the early days (Kim Inju, Ok Sehyeon, Ji Seungdo, Cha Sangsun, Kim Wondeok, Park Jeonghwa, Eom Deokmun, Gwak Nopil, Lee Yohan, Lee Bongun, Yang Yunyeong, Yang Yunsin, Kim Yeongun, Kim Sunhwa, and countless others) received evidence from the spirit world that Father is the Messiah and experienced the Holy Spirit descending with fire that enabled them to realize that Father is the Messiah, and so despite countless persecutions, they were able to join the Church. In contrast to this, regarding the bride candidate, Han Hak Ja, from the time of her first joining the church until now, as far as it is known, none of the family members have ever received evidence or revelations testifying to her as "the only begotten daughter without original sin."

Here we should examine the concept of the so-called "only begotten daughter," especially the falsity of Kim Jinchun's "theory of the first coming only-begotten daughter without original sin." The Word naming the "only begotten son" is mentioned in John 3:16 in the Bible as a confession of faith by the apostle John. There is no expression naming an only-begotten daughter. In this case, the only begotten Son means "the only Son of God who was born as Adam, an original creation without original sin." There is no expression of the only begotten daughter in the Bible, because

there is no need providentially for an “only daughter of God to be born as Eve without original sin” as the spousal partner of the only begotten Son Jesus.

However, when the Lord of the Second Advent and Bridegroom comes, this person will be born, just like Jesus, as the only begotten Son of God without original sin. Therefore, when this person restores and welcomes Eve as his bride, the Eve who was selected, has her original sin cleansed, and goes to the position of the only begotten daughter, and stands as a bride, and takes the position of wife to the Lord of the Second Advent to become a couple with the Second Advent Messiah as the True Mother of humankind and to become the True Parents of humankind. Accordingly, because she becomes the only begotten daughter who has her original sin cleansed by the principle of the true love of the Lord of the Second Advent, the “only begotten Son” can use that name for the Lord of the Second Advent’s spouse. Therefore, Father, before and after the True Parents’ Holy Marriage, the Feast of the Lamb, mentioned the appearance of the only begotten daughter several times, but never once did he mean the “only begotten daughter born without original sin.”

Nonetheless, while pulling out the concept of three generations of only daughters out of the blue without any biblical, providential, and principled basis, Kim Jinchun is making bizarre talk about “the birth of the first coming only begotten daughter without original sin” as the finishing touch of Kim Jinchun’s edition of the

only begotten daughter's Song of Dragons Flying in Heaven (Yongbieocheon-ga: i.e. the fictitious and flattering founding myth of the Joseon dynasty). What could this be other than a detonator in order to recklessly destroy the Principle and blow up True Parents? Even if the only begotten daughter continues for a hundred generations, the original sin cannot be erased. I cannot just sit back and listen to this ridiculous nonsense. I would like to clarify here that this is the reason I declare my firm decision to protect "True Parents" who are the reality of the Principle, Word, and all traditions.

[Kim Jinchun] *Because of that, I said, does it fit with the Principle that Father who again has a past scandal is in the position of the Second Advent, and Mother, who is in the position of a bride who completed her individuality and has no scandal at the First Coming, gives bows to Father? From a principle point of view, in fact, from a heavenly point of view, Mother has no satanic conditions, and she is a bride who has completed her individuality as the First Coming, so why does Mother have to give bows to Father like that for forty to fifty years? Concerning that, Mother could not talk, no matter how many times she wanted to. Now that is very much internal content.*

This paragraph, too, is unbelievably thoughtless talk. Going beyond the thoughtless talk, it is an act of dividing the two halves

into sides to the extreme by blaspheming and humiliating Father. These are the words and deeds of a devil trying to estrange the two and shatter the True Parents into pieces. Is acting like this filial piety to liberate Father? Or conversely, is it treason and disloyalty that expels Father?

It has been ten years since Father was sanctified, and he summons Father, he disgraces and downgrades him, and paints a dirty coat of paint over Father's noble status and solemn image while, on the other hand, all the providential achievements thus far achieved were not thanks to Father, who had a scandal in his past, but because Mother completed her individuality as a fully completed Princess Snow White. He gives a long-winded talk about the "theory of the only begotten daughter of the first coming with no original sin" without any root or basis for saying such a thing is possible. This is the devil's voice. It is the voice of an idiot who does not know what original sin is, what the first coming is, and what the only-begotten daughter is. Can you dare to say that this is possible? If Father is downgraded, will Mother become elevated and will she be perfect, winning victory after victory? Will all the blessed families who received the gift of blessed marriage from the two of them survive? I decided to make no further reference to this paragraph. I leave it to your imagination.

[Kim Jinchun] *So, we have to create a one-world extended family. We need to quickly liquidate the True Parents' past scandal, the bad scandal in the past and the scandal that Satan accuses, as soon*

as possible. In particular, it must be done before the Cheonil Shrine (completion) next year. Mother spoke about this. So, since there is such content, the content of Father's sanctification before Foundation Day also has such deep content buried in it. If Heavenly Parent is the principle of principle, there really must be no conditions for Satan's accusation in front of Heavenly Parent. We must also understand this Seonghwa from Heavenly Parent's standards. Such is the content.

Going one step further, as you can see in the quote above, according to Kim Jinchun, Father has a bad past scandal that enables Satan to accuse him of various faults; it is said that he was sanctified before Foundation Day because he was not qualified to celebrate Foundation Day on Earth. He was babbling wantonly with blasphemous lies. Can you imagine anyone evaluating Father's lifetime in this way in such a denigrating tone that verges on a curse that explodes within us when we hear it? It was also formalized in the education of the World Leaders General Assembly! This is clearly the whispering of the devil who has infiltrated the church's leadership, and it cannot but be a rebellion against the Kingdom of God. Therefore, I would like to return the above words in their entirety to the person who said them.

There are many other things that should be mentioned and pointed out, but I would like to end this section here. Kim

Jinchun is trumpeting, his own nonsense, which is full of lies and distortions, as truth in the name of Mother in front of family members. Such a person is using the blood and sweat offerings of family members in his position as Chief Justice of the Cheon Il Guk Court. The person who is the Chief Justice of the Cheon Il Guk Court is taking the lead in destroying the ideal of True Parents in an unprincipled, anti-Providential way? Who would tolerate that?

I heard that there are people around this person who are planning something together, so I ask you not to deviate from the path of true Principle, the way of Providence. Please remember God's curse brought down upon Ham, who, while ashamed of his father Noah's nakedness, instigated his brothers to cover up Noah's lower body. Also, keep in mind the curse of Heaven on Miriam and Aaron, who vilified Moses for taking a foreign Cushite woman. We need to know what terrifying consequences may result from judging the central figure in charge of God's Providence of restoration by the yardstick of human and worldly ethics and morals. Still more, there is no need to say anything about Father, the Lord of the Second Advent, who completely indemnified the 6,000-year history of sin.

Looking at the chaotic situation in our church right now, what shall True Father be preparing to do? Please do not forget the day that will be approaching when Father's work of the Holy Spirit will blow like a typhoon. I repeatedly ask you to keep in mind the advent of the era of the Yeongyeonse Association (靈聯世協會) led by Father, and I wish you good health and good fortune.

■ Kim Jinchun's Lecture Contents

-Transcription of the Original Text, April 20, 2022

From Mother's point of view, the position of Father who inherited the mission of the Second Advent Messiah, was to follow the Principle, and that is really a pity. Therefore, Father was not in the position to determine the bride at the time of Holy Marriage in 1960 due to having such a scandal in his past.

We have received a lot of education until now that says that Father chooses a woman from among the fallen women, and for seven years, Father, the Lord of the Second Advent, educates and re-creates Mother.

If you look at the contents of what I said earlier, you realize that this is not so.

And Mother should not marry before the Feast of the Lamb, nor should Mother do the Providence of restoration. I told you about it before, but Mother also emphasized those words again.

So, Mother saw these contents in the 60s, and already in March of '56, Mother met Father through Daemanim. So, while attending church services during these four years, '56, '57, '58, and '59, Mother said that she heard a lot of stories. Mother knows a lot. Mother heard it. But, Mother said because she only had the thought to fulfill God's will, Mother said that she agonized a lot about that, about how to accomplish that will. Mother talked like

that. So, Mother knew the situation was like that, and because Mother was young at the time, there was no one around to help Mother, and Mother was not in a position to speak out strongly, so Mother said "I decided that I will have to patiently endure." Mother spoke like that.

And because Mother heard and knew a lot of rumors about Father, she said "I have to embrace those contents and come to solve them somehow." Mother said "Yes, I made that decision." So Mother says that the reason Mother decided to go to the position of True Parents and wash away the responsibility of True Parents was because she knew the situation at that time so well. She said she did that.

So Mother had no choice but to wait patiently, because Father had a strong character and because he presided over everything and knew a lot of world leaders and people in the outside world, so no matter how many times Mother wanted to talk about her will, she couldn't talk by nature, because Mother had developed within such a large social context and the strong charisma of Father. So Mother could not talk to Father and she just continued. Mother kept holding it in her heart and waited. Mother said she waited fifty years to tell you.

And although Mother has told the story many times that Mother is a little sad about the fact that after Father's sanctification, her children no longer existed in the world. How can this happen in the True Parents' family? Because of Mother's life, Mother cannot live because Mother is ashamed.

Mother said it is too shameful for her to look at the world. I have heard her say that a few times now. So, because Father was in charge of everything and had such strong charisma, if he had educated the children until they understood well the essence of the only begotten daughter and the essential mission and values of Mother by meticulously repeating them well, Mother would not have had to suffer so much, but this was too hard. I have heard Mother saying many times that it is too hard for her.

And it is truly a pitiful thing that it is said that there are scandals connected to the True Parents. So, the content that many of the world's people are paying attention to is now the scandalous content, mainly related to the Father's past scandals.

So now we have to work hard on this, in order to get rid of Father's past scandals, we have to make an effort to liberate him. Father, who is in the spirit world, please help us a little bit? How do we do that? Will we be able to liquidate that-that scandal of Father's and True Parents' scandal?

I want you all to struggle while praying during this special devotion period, shout a little now, and next year, a new era will open, and with a year ahead, all of you have been praying earnestly so that Father will help us and work on our behalf. Mother asked me to please tell you sincerely to do this in order to solve our difficult problems. Mother said something along those lines.

And before this Holy Marriage, from a principled point of view, these contents that Satan accuses a lot again from the spiritual world are, in some way, like a button that has not been fastened properly, because it is inserted, now it has to be undone again, and this button must be re-inserted in its original form. One has to make a fresh start. So, the ideal values of our True Parents, who have no scandal and no shame in front of the Cheonil Shrine of the Heavenly Parent Crusade, must come to be. Mother emphasized these words even more.

And Father has many such difficulties, and we must somehow solve those difficulties according to the standards of this only begotten daughter. Otherwise, there is no standard, so how can we solve it? What is a way that the world can accept? From that point of view, it is important to solve such difficulties through Mother. If we also were a little more sincere, that would be good. That is what I would like to say.

So Father has to meet the only begotten daughter, since the Lord of the Second Advent, the Second Advent's mission is to do what Jesus could not do, to meet the only begotten daughter and have the feast of the Lamb. The most important thing Father had wanted to do was meet the only begotten daughter, and the feast of the Lamb was the most important thing. When looked at from that perspective, considering the essence of the only begotten daughter and Mother's essential role, ideal and value, I wish Father had

done better at that time. That was rather regrettable. Mother spoke about details like that.

Because of that, I said, does it fit with the Principle that Father, who again has a past scandal, is in the position of the Second Advent, and Mother, who is in the position of a bride who completed her individuality and has no scandal at the First Coming, gives bows to Father? From a principle point of view, in fact, from a heavenly point of view, Mother has no satanic conditions, and she is a bride who has completed her individuality as the First Coming, so why does Mother have to give bows to Father like that for forty to fifty years? Concerning that, Mother could not talk, no matter how many times she wanted to. Now that is very much internal content.

And one cannot hide these things that all the people of the world know about Father before the Holy Marriage and after the Holy Marriage. Now it cannot be hidden. We understand how we do well in principle. We need to do this well for our children too. So, the condition for this accusation by Satan is the condition for Satan's accusation of the content that was before the Holy Marriage, and all the various things there were that happened after the Holy Marriage become a condition for Satan's accusation. Whatever one is going to do about this, one has to wipe it out so that Father can be free. Because there are many such accusations in the spirit world, it is said that Father is also probably having an extremely

difficult time. Father, too.

Mother talked about that kind of content, saying we have to liberate Father from this now. We have to do it naturally, and our leaders should play a role in that. So now we have to cut off what we want to cut off and start over anew. We should not keep carrying scandals around. Also, our church should not keep carrying around a scandal of heresy now. Mother emphasized these contents.

Then, how can True Parents have scandals and bless mankind and talk about the large cosmic family of humankind? It is hard for me too, Mother. It is stressful.

It was all revealed through this event, but now they are all doing research about Father and Mother. Because there is a huge amount of data on the internet. I do research and seminars, but it appears that Mother is also very worried. Mother is worried about how she will do this when this and that attack comes in the future.

So, we have to create a one-world extended family. We need to quickly liquidate the True Parents' scandal, the bad scandal, and the scandal that is the object of Satan's accusations as soon as possible. In particular, it must be done before the Cheonil Shrine (completion) next year. Mother mentioned that.

So, since there is such content, Father's sanctification before Foundation Day also has such deep content buried in it. If Heavenly Parent is the principle of principle, there really

must be no conditions for Satan's accusation in front of Heavenly Parent. We must also understand this Seonghwa from Heavenly Parent's standards. Such is the content.

Then again, as I said before, our leaders have come this far with a burden in their hearts, and it is truly heartbreaking, but I hope they can now shake off that matter and get better. Mother also said something like that.

And Mother said that it was a very hard and difficult course for Mother, especially during the fifty-three years Mother had been waiting. Note that, Mother waited patiently for it because Mother knew the circumstances of Heavenly Parent, Parents, Mother knows the circumstances of Heavenly Parent because there is a standard of commitment made to Heavenly Parent. Even though it was difficult, Mother says that she has endured patiently for more than fifty years.

So now, Father must no longer become the True Father who is ashamed before Heaven. We have to liberate Father, and we have to save him. Everyone, whatever you do, you have to make an effort. And I am also asking you to ask Father to help us in the same way.

So, next year, the Heavenly Parent's Assembly must be dedicated to the Cheonil Palace [referring to the Cheon Il Shrine], and Mother, in the next year also, wants to attend Heavenly Parent from a truly flawless position that has no controversial defects or issues.

Before the dedication of this Cheon Il Shrine next year, Mother really wants to attend Heavenly Parent from that kind of truly flawless position that has no controversial defects or issues before the Heavenly Parent. So, it would be good, if everyone also did some cleaning up a little. Such is the content.

And there was the content of this lecture about the truth of this victory, and everyone must be born again before it. Everyone must be born again. It must be such a time. Mother also said such words.

There is a lot to say, but for now, I would like to share some additional recent content that I did not emphasize during the lecture.

So, are our questions here? This lasts until 5:30. So, let's take a look while respecting that time. So, when I looked here today, there were quite a few. I'll do it within the time frame, and if I run out of time, I'll do it again tomorrow because I have some more time then.

6. Testimony of How I Joined the Church

The Beginning

I was born in 1928, so ninety-four years ago. Many years have passed. Many of my friends who went to school with me and brothers who joined the church and worked together with me left this earth to go to the spiritual world, and not many of my peers remain.

But why have I lived this long?

It is not because I want to live that way. I think God's will is also present here. God made me live this long because I have a responsibility that I must do, and I must fulfill my responsibility. So I consider that my remaining time is so precious to me. I feel that I have to live my remaining life thinking about how I will share even greater joy before God and before True Father and True Mother.

It has been a full sixty-seven years this year since I joined our church. However, while I have been attending church, I have never made a profession of my faith. So today I am going to share my personal testimony.

I have a lot to say to everyone about God's will and today's Providence. There are a lot of important things in various ways, and that is going to be shared at the next occasion.

Today, I will give a simple biography and testimony from my birth up to my blessed marriage. I will share with you all the paths I have walked until now and how much work God has come and done for me in the meantime.

My Father's Dream and My Birth

I was born on September 29, 1928, in the year of Mujin (16th day of the 8th lunar month), in Dancheon Town, Dancheon County, adjacent to the east coast of the northern part of South Hamgyeong Province. In 1928, was it not the Japanese Colonial Period? If using Japanese era terms, it was the third year of the Showa Era.

When I was born, my family was living in my father's older brother's house. My mother conceived me in that house and gave birth before 1 a.m., the hour of the Rat, on the 16th day of the 8th lunar month.

It is said that she carried the sacrificial offering table on her head and went to and from the ancestral grave. And that night, she was in her room, and she quietly went out alone, but no family members knew where she was going.

In the middle of the night, however, they heard a noise. So my father's older brother's wife and my elder female cousins looked around for her, but she was not there, so it appears that they went

out and looked for her.

At that time, in my father's older brother's house there was a barn where rice husks were piled up, and my mother went there and gave birth to me by herself. How painful will it be if rice husks touch your body? Even so, in the middle of that, everyone said they were surprised at how the rice husks did not get into the baby's eyes. In that way, they took the baby and brought it to a room.

But at that time my father was outside, and he dreamed a dream. In the dream, a white stone was floating in the sky, and it appeared that it was descending. It was a wide field with no one in it, and it is said that my father ran and received the stone with his hand. That was my *taemong*, or a dream of a forthcoming conception. After receiving the white stone that came down from heaven like that, he left and returned home and found that I had been born. My father is an atheist who believes in Confucianism, and he repeatedly told me this *taemong* story as much as it could be told.

From an early age, I was very interested in spiritual matters. My grandmother passed away at the age of more than ninety, and she had a friend named Grandma Gombo. While I listened to so many stories this Grandma Gombo told, I became interested in the spirit world.

My Father's Marriage and Double Bereavement

My father, Kim Junggeun, was born in 1897, and there is a

thirty-one-year age difference with me. After Korea was annexed by Japan, Gyeongseong Middle School was established by the government in Seoul, and it was later called Gyeonggi Middle School. My father entered that school, but he did not like Japanese-style education, so he dropped out and went to Yongjeong, Gando, Manchuria, and was admitted to and graduated from Yongjeong Middle School.

After that, my father married his first wife, who died shortly after giving birth to my elder half-brother. My father's first wife passed away suddenly, and because there was no one to raise him, my elder half-brother was raised by my father's sister (paternal aunt).

My father entrusted the care of the baby to my paternal aunt, and while doing business together with his elder brother in Dancheon, he went to Japan to study abroad. He entered Waseda University in Tokyo and studied in the Department of Political Economy and, after graduating, returned home.

After that, while my father went back again to doing business with my paternal uncle (father's elder brother), he remarried in 1927 with my mother while working. And in September 1928, the following year, I was born. My elder half-brother was born in 1916 and is twelve years older than me. My elder half-brother entered and graduated from the Faculty of Law, Meiji University, Japan.

I entered elementary school in 1935, the year when I turned eight years old. My mother passed away on January 20, 1939, after I finished the fourth year of elementary school and before I entered the fifth grade. Born in 1911, my mother ended her short life at the age of twenty-nine.

Before her death, even though her body was in a very weak condition, my mother gave birth to six children. I am the eldest, and there are four younger sisters and one younger brother, so we are six siblings. My mother came in after my father's first spouse, and she also died early. My brother had finished college by then, but since I was going up to the fifth grade of elementary school, the road ahead was bleak.

Farewell to My Birth Mother and Stepmother

My mother contracted pulmonary tuberculosis, and she was unable to live with her family and stayed apart. At that time, lung disease was the most terrifying disease, and there was not even a cure for it. Behind the house, there was a *hanok* (Korean-style house) where we used to live, and there were two rooms, so we were treated separately.

It was January 1939. The weather was cold, and it was snowing a little at a time. I went there because I was contacted and told to come to the place where my mother was staying. I did not even know why they were calling me. When I went there, there was a room where my mother was staying, and there was one upstairs room. I did not go into the place where my mother was staying, but stood by the side of the door of the upper room. At that time, my mother was lying down in the lower room, and the doctor and my father stayed together.

It turns out that my mother had called me because she

wanted to see me for the last time. However, my mother did not say anything and looked at me for a long time. Then she started moaning because her body was hurting again. Just then my father saw me and told me to go out, so I went out. But after a while, I heard the news that my mother had passed away.

My father was thirty-one years older than me. My younger siblings were young, and the youngest was only two years old. So, how would my father raise us alone?

At that time, our family was well known in Dancheon. Rumors of about our family spread around the Hamgyeong Province area, and the third wife, Kim Sunhwa came in as a foster mother. Mother Kim Sunhwa graduated from Ewha Womans University and went to Japan Women's University to study.

After studying abroad, she returned to Ewha Womans University and also taught students as an assistant professor. After that, she was a teacher at Ewha Girls High School, and later, in her hometown, she was a teacher at Hamheung Yeongsaeng Girls High School. It was around that time that she heard the news of our family.

My stepmother was an "old maid" near the age of thirty at the time, and she was a devout Methodist believer. Still, as a result, I heard that she said that she felt a sense of responsibility to raise the six children before she even met my father.

That mother, too, grew up under a single mother after her father passed away early. Her single mother operated a large fruit orchard in Hamheung, and Mother Kim Sunhwa, while working as a school teacher, helped her by doing a lot of work. Meanwhile, she

decided to come into our house and get married to my father in September 1939. After my stepmother came into our house, she gave birth to four younger brothers.

An Upright, Magnanimous, and Strong-Willed Father

When my father was young, he was a person known for having an upright character and strong magnanimity. I do not know the year, but one day, a young Chinese gangster came to my hometown of Dancheon and was making a fuss saying that he was doing eighteen martial arts. Then, it is said that when my father saw it, he got angry and took a club and beat that guy until he was half dead and drove him away.

Before my mother died, something happened, and my father was arrested by the Japanese police. At that time, it was because the war between Japan and China called the Ilji Incident (Ilji sabyeon 日支事變) was at its height.

A few months before that incident, the chief of the Dancheon Police Station called the townspeople to the police station yard and gave an important speech. The content was about building a port in Dancheon, and the landowners were asked to donate the land needed to build the port. The landowners did not say anything and just looked at the ground and kept silent. Then my father stood up and protested that the construction was good, but didn't they have to pay a price to take the land?

So the Japanese chief stood up in anger and shouted in a

loud voice, "You should go and live under the Chiang Kai-shek regime in China." So, the meeting fizzled out and ended.

At that time, my elementary school friend's father was the head of the Dancheon Police Station, and I called my friends and had fun in our house's living room. There were chairs and sofas, so you could run and play on them. But one day, my father's notebook went missing. I did not even know it was gone, but the notebook ended up in the police station. The notebook had various kinds of memos written in it. Because of those memos, my father was taken to the police station.

I did not know that my father was taken to the police station, and I had understood that he had gone on a business trip somewhere. But one day in the evening, while my father told me where he was going, and an employee of our company came and took me and went to the train station. At the time, it was early winter. It was a bit cold, so my father was wearing a coat. My father had his hands bound under his coat, but I did not even know that. I wondered where my father was going, and I saw him off.

At that time, my father was put on the train and transported to the prosecutor's branch office in Bukcheong Town, an hour south of the city. Since there were no prosecutors in Dancheon, he went to that place in order to be investigated. And a few days later, my father returned safely. Fortunately, the Japanese prosecutor in Bukcheong was an alumnus of Waseda University, which my father had attended in Japan. So, when the prosecutor said that there was nothing odd in the notebook, he dropped the guilty verdict, and let my father go home. Anyway, because of that

incident, my father resigned from all honorary positions he had in Dancheon, such as fire marshal.

My Father's Brother's Business Acumen

My father and his elder brother were very close. My father took his uncle, who was two years older than him, as his father, and while taking good care of my father, he ran the business. At that time, my father created a company called "Kim Sugeun Company" that was named after my paternal uncle. We bought soybeans from Manchuria, carefully selected them from the Kim Sugeun Company in Dancheon, and sold them to Japan, and we also sold Manchurian wood to Japan. Since we were doing business with Japan like that, when I entered elementary school, I remember my father buying things like a desk, a chair, and a Randoseru backpack from Japan.

There are many mines in Dancheon, our hometown. The magnesite resources are the most abundant in the world, and there are various other mineral resources such as graphite. At that time, there was a small thermoelectric power plant in Dancheon, so households in the town used electricity at night, but electricity was not supplied for use in the mines. So in the mines, they had no choice but to use an oil engine. The Kim Sugeun Company opened an agency for the Japanese Rising Sun Oil Company, and while supplying shell oil to the mines, my father worked in many fields.

One of them was a fishery that caught sardines at sea. He bought several fishing boats and fished in the East Sea. At that

time, the main target fish was sardines, but usually the period for catching fish is two years, and after only two years, no fish can be caught. However, during my father's time, there were typhoons for seven consecutive years. My uncle's yard was wide, so he set up a fishing net factory on one side of it, while weaving and supplying fishing nets, he got into fishing and made a large sum of money. People said that this was something that was usually not possible.

There are many mines and rice fields in Dancheon, so there is a lot of rice produced, and naturally it happens that there are many trucks too. So, my father ran the only Dancheon General Motors factory (automobile repair factory) in Dancheon County, and he did all the repairs, including the boring and honing of the engines of various vehicles. My older brother was in charge of the car repair shop, and he also did electrical work, so he went to the southern Korea region and took charge of the electric construction there.

My grandfather died before I was born, so I never met him. When I was about to begin sixth grade in elementary school, I only went to my grandfather's grave once. That place was a place where there was a stone statue that looked like a person riding on a stone horse, and there were many rocks of various strange shapes.

Before he made my grandfather's grave on that spot, a Feng Shui practitioner came to see and said that if a grave was made on that spot, the eldest son's house would be rejected, and there would be no son, but the house of the second son would become a house with much wealth and many sons. However, it is said that my uncle decided to make the grave in that place even after hearing those words. So I don't know why, but my uncle's

house was rejected, and he had one son, but he died when he was nineteen, and they became a family with only four daughters. Our house of the second son, had a lot of wealth and became a house with many sons.

Going to School in Seoul and the Heukseok-dong House

In 1941, I had to go to middle school, but there was no middle school in Dancheon. So I made up my mind to leave Dancheon and decided to go to Seoul Middle School. If I was going to go to school in Seoul, I had to board at a boarding house. But my father thought that I should not board, and so he built a house in Seoul. After he met my stepmother in September 1939, he decided to build a house in Seoul in 1940, and he started making the blueprints.

My father thought that if Korea was going to thrive in the future, industry had to develop, so he sold part of his rice paddies and built an ironworks workshop named Neungsu Ironworks in Dancheon. He bought various machine tools from Japan and Korea, installed them, and it became possible for him to make various machines and equipment. It was because of my father's industrialist idea that I later went to a college of engineering.

My father bought a lot of 8896 square feet of land in Heukseok-dong, Yeongdeungpo-gu, Seoul, and built a three-story stone house (a semi-basement and a stone house up to the first floor) with one floor in the basement and two floors above the ground

and moved there from Dancheon on November 21, 1941. The floor area of the house was 3025 square feet. At that time, there were no stone houses in Seoul, so there were no engineers to build the stone house, so we brought in Chinese stonemasons to build it.

At that time, my uncle graduated from the English Language and Literature Department of Waseda University in Japan and taught English at Gyeongseong Public Technical School. So I boarded with my uncle in Myeongnyun-dong and attended school there. Then, when the Heukseok-dong house was completed, I left the boarding house and came into our house.

However, on December 8 of that year, not long after the move was completed, the Pacific War (a major theater of World War II) began with the Japanese naval attack on Pearl Harbor, Hawaii. At that time, the school I attended was Seongnam Middle School in Yeongdeungpo.

I attended the fourth grade and graduated, but I never took a bus at any time. School life was a kind of training. All actions were commanded to be done on foot, so the students all wore gaiters from their ankles to their knees just like the soldiers and walked back and forth. I walked more than five miles every day from Heukseok-dong to Seongnam Middle School on the Yeongdeungpo side.

In school, drilling was severe, and I did a lot of military training. I only learned English two hours a week, and I did not do other studies. In the meantime, I thought I would have to go to a good university, and I studied hard.

Because of the circumstances at the time, in March 1945,

early graduation from Japanese junior high schools nationwide was ordered. In that year alone, fourth and fifth graders all graduated together. Therefore, the university admission quota naturally doubled, eliminating the entrance exam and selecting new students only through the school admission process.

However, when I was in third grade, my lungs got a little weak, and I took a break. That was disadvantageous for admission into a school of higher grade. It was best when one worked, and it was quite disadvantageous when one had taken a break or something like that. Such a thing is not decided from the beginning; while the decision was made shortly before graduation, the high school entrance exam competition became severe.

At that time, the only university in Korea was Gyeongseong Imperial University. There were preparatory courses, technical high schools, higher commercial colleges, etc. I studied hard even in normal years, but in 1945 I studied even harder. There were exam subjects at that time, but I had no choice but to study mainly for the entrance exam.

Combining the fourth and fifth grades, my test results were always within seventh place. My grades were good, but I was at a great disadvantage in the admissions process. Meanwhile, I applied to the Preparatory Department of Gyeongseong Imperial University. At that time, the Japanese student quota was large, and the Korean student quota was very small.

A few people applied at our school, but only one judge's son was accepted. I applied to the Department of Engineering, and he applied to the Law Department. It was admission based on

academic record, as a Korean, but because he was the son of a former judge in the Japanese government, he was accepted, and I was rejected.

Recuperation in My Hometown and Liberation on August 15, 1945

I went to my hometown house in Dancheon. My home was in Seoul, but because I was weak, I was sent to rest in my uncle's house in Dancheon. At that time, I took my five-year-old brother, and we stayed there together. However, that year, Korea regained independence on August 15, 1945. No one predicted it, and then suddenly we became liberated.

After that, I lived in the hope that the divided 38th Parallel would open up in the north. Everyone lived as they were because they could not leave the house, and there was no future in sight.

My father had four brothers, and the younger brother under my father entered Tokyo College of Commerce during the Japanese Colonial Period. Different departments are the best now, but other departments were the best back then. Now the Department of Engineering is the best, but at that time, the Department of Business Administration was the best. Tokyo College of Commerce was more difficult to get into than Tokyo Imperial University. My uncle entered that most difficult college.

At that time, there were no separate left and right wings. Korean students residing in Japan viewed the leftist movement as if

it were a Korean independence movement. So, while my uncle worked in the anti-Japanese movement with them, he was active on the left, but it became a problem, and, in the end, he was expelled. Because of that, no one knows how great the disappointment became at home. After returning home, my uncle just drank alcohol every day.

The area adjacent to the northeast of Dancheon, North Hamgyeong Province, is Seongjin. Since the Korean War, that location has become Kimchaek City, where there was a steel refinery company. Even now, all kinds of steel products are produced there. At that time, my father and my father's older brother bought a soju making factory called Seongcheon Brewery in Seongjin City. While making alcohol, my uncle managed the brewery there. I also often went to my uncle's house to play on the weekends.

Leaving My Hometown and the Road to Seoul

On September 23, 1945, a call came to the Dancheon house from my uncle, who lived in Seongjin. A freight car was standing on the rail at one end of Dancheon Station, and I was told to get in there at 7:00 a.m. on the 25th of September. Because I was told to come by seven in the morning, I carried my younger brother on my back and left from home to Dancheon Station. I went there, and there was a freight car, so I went inside and met my uncle's family. Then, while we were waiting, a locomotive came and attached that freight car, and we went down to the south.

After going for about an hour, we arrived at Bukcheong. Everyone got off there and went into an inn. But at night, the security forces went back and forth to investigate, interrogating people, and if they found anything strange, they chased them and sent them away. My uncle's mother is from Gaeseong, Hwanghae Province, so her speech is different from Hamgyeong Province, but I was wearing a school uniform and spoke the Seoul dialect. So, they saw that we had a connection in the South.

We slept for one night and changed to another train on September 26 and arrived at Sintanjin Station, which is near the 38th Parallel. That was the location, just where the Hantan River is. We had to cross that river, and there was a railway bridge there.

There were many refugees coming down from Manchuria, and it was difficult for the family to go together. So, I thought of crossing the railroad tracks by walking among the refugees in the middle of the night. However, while the Soviet troops were guarding the railway bridge, only thirty people were passed through it once a day at 10:00 p.m.

The river was both shallow and deep in places, so it was dangerous to cross blindly. So, my uncle's family attached themselves to a guide separately and followed without knowing where they were going. I went separately at night to the railroad bridge carrying my brother on my back and stood in the refugee line and waited, and late at night, Soviet soldiers were counting people one by one and letting them pass through. Exactly thirty people passed in front of me, but since I was carrying my younger brother on my back, the soldier saw my younger brother and let us pass through, too.

In that way, miraculously, we were able to cross the Hantan River and come down to the south. However, after actually passing through, my body relaxed with a sense of liberation and relief, so I walked a little further and just lay down on the railroad tracks and fell asleep.

At that time, all I had was a spare pair of pants and no money. The next day, I got up, changed my pants, and went down to Dongducheon. A little further on, there was Jeongok Station, where the train came, and we had to pass through a U.S. military checkpoint. Because I spoke English, I said that I was on my way to Dongducheon, so after passing through the checkpoint, I went to Jeongok Station, got on the train, and came into Seoul with my younger brother that day. That day was September 27, and September 29 was my birthday. There was a covered well in the yard of my house in Seoul, where I washed my hands and feet before entering the house. Then, the family was surprised. My mother was going to pick us up in the North, but how happy she would be that we had come back just before my birthday.

Life Right After Liberation and the Outbreak of the Korean War on June 25, 1950

In our family, only our houses were built in Seoul, and all our businesses were located in the North. However, because the 38th Parallel was blocked, the money could not come. As soon as it turned out like that, I studied and taught English and electrical

engineering at Dongyang Technical Middle School in Heukseok-dong. However, because that did not provide enough income, I started selling assets in the house one by one. We sold furniture. We sold books, and we disposed of many things.

When disposing of furniture, I put it on a cart pulled by an ox, and I walked with the cart and crossed the Han River Bridge and transported it into the city. When my father was studying at the Department of Political Economy, Waseda University, Japan, an English book titled Capitalism that he had bought was precious, but after liberation, I was able to sell it at quite a high price. I continued to make a living by selling all those precious books. I lived in a big house, but I did not have money, so I could not help but live like this.

In February 1946, there was the Korean National Association for the Promotion of Independence, which was started by Dr. Syngman Rhee. And there was also the Korean Patriotic Women's Association. My step-mother worked as a general affairs person in the Korean Patriotic Women's Association. After working there, in August 1948, when the government was established and the Ministry of Health and Social Affairs was created, she took office as the head of the guidance department. As we came to have such an income, we gradually found stability.

Then, after a while, the Korean War broke out on June 25, 1950. Before that, because there were frequent skirmishes on the 38th Parallel, at first, I thought that there would just be more such skirmishes, and I took it lightly. But this time, it was different. The People's Army came in attacking on all fronts. The battle started in

the morning of that day. By June 28, the northern part of Seoul, north of the Han River, was occupied.

Because June 25 was a Sunday, many officers and soldiers in the front line units were given furloughs, so the front line was empty. Also, at that time in Seoul, an Army Hall was built, and on the night before the war, Army Chief of Staff Chae Byeongdeok called the officers to a drinking party, and they all got drunk and went out stumbling and fell about. I later found out that Chae Byeongdeok was a leftist who had deliberately planned it all. That night, Chae Byeongdeok went to bed and told the others not to wake him up, no matter what happened on the following morning. He knew in advance that war was going to happen. At that time, most of the officers and soldiers were off duty because they were given many furloughs and leaves of absence.

The Miracle of the Family Reunion at Cheonan Station

On June 28, 1950, three days after the war started, my father and I, realizing that the situation was serious, decided to leave the house. It was raining that day, so we departed. At the time, I had not been paid by the school where I used to work part-time, so I went there to get paid, but there was no one at the school. As a result, I brought a raincoat without money or belongings and went forward on the road with my father. We went down from Seoul to Cheonan without a penny.

But when we arrived in Cheonan, my father suggested that

we go back to Seoul because the situation was serious. So I had no choice but to follow my father back to Seoul.

There is a low mountain in the area that crosses over to Heukseok-dong from Sangdo-dong, which is an area that borders Heukseok-dong. When we got there, an ROK infantry reconnaissance team was stationed there. While running around the mountain armed with machine guns, they were searching, and my father and I were caught by them. A lieutenant who was the platoon leader was, fortunately, a Hamgyeong Province man. At that time, we had Dancheon County refugee certificates, and while showing that, we conversed and made ourselves understood.

At the time, my father was over fifty years old, and I was twenty-three years old. Because my father said that he would go on to Heukseok-dong, the lieutenant told my father to go and told me not to go because if I went, I would die. Doing like that, my father and I came to be separated there. With no promises of what to do in the future, my father went home, and I turned around and went back down towards Cheonan.

When I went all the way to Cheonan, there was no place to go. I did not have a place to sleep right then, so I looked around, and there was one passenger car inside the station platform. It was raining, so I went inside the passenger car and sat down in order to rest. However, there was no way to sleep. After sitting for a few hours dozing off like that, late at night a freight train came in from Seoul. Trains could not come down from the north side of the Han River, but trains still came down from Yeongdeungpo or south of the Han River. But the train came to

the platform on the other side of the passenger car where I was, and stopped next to it.

I realized that a train had arrived and sat casually, and I heard a coughing sound. But when I listened quietly, it sounded like the sound of my father coughing. There was no reason to hear my father coughing, so I remained sitting still, and I heard the same sound several times.

So, just in case, I went down and looked, and there was a freight car without a roof standing on the other side of the same location as the passenger car I was sitting in. But there was no one else there, and only my family was gathered and sitting there. It was not a situation where trains ran often, I did not make any commitments in advance, so an impossible thing had happened. When I encountered that wonderful coincidence, I did not even ask my family how they came to be there.

The First Miracle during the Days of the Busan Evacuation

Our family, which met so dramatically at Cheonan Station, rode the freight car together and went down to Daejeon and got off. At that time, my mother's friend was serving as the principal of Daejeon Girls' Middle School in Daejeon. We went to that house and stayed there for fourteen days.

After fourteen days, orders were issued for us to retreat again. At that time, we could not get on the train at Daejeon Station and walked to the next station. There was a freight train

there, and getting on was very difficult. Somehow, the children and women were put into the passenger car, and my father and I climbed up and rode on the roof of the freight car and went down to Busan with the family. It was hard to get a seat like that, but I did not know how fortunate I was just to be able to get on.

We arrived in Busan around July 16, 1950. By the time we arrived, left-wing youths had already come out, and now in Seoul, Ewha Womans University students were demonstrating about what they were doing and conducting propaganda in a form that supported the North Korean side.

In Busan, the official residence of the governor of South Gyeongsang Province was located in Bumin-dong, and the Goryeo Theological Seminary was located nearby. However, fortunately, there were no students because it was vacation time. At that time, the student dormitory was a Quonset hut (semi-circular barracks). Because my mother was a civil servant, my family and I were assigned a room in a Quonset, which was used as a dormitory, and we continued living there. The Quonset hut had a central aisle, with three rooms on each side. There were several such Quonsets, and refugees were living in assigned rooms. When I woke up in the morning, it was very noisy. Because everyone had to go to the bathroom, get washed, and cook rice, it was crowded and noisy.

Also, since there was a large auditorium at the seminary, Christians went and prayed fervently. At that time, while Christians were praying, they received a revelation saying that the Lord had come to North Korea. They thought if their Lord is going to come, why is the Lord not coming to the free south, and coming to the

unfree North Korea? But in reality, it seems that they had received such a revelation because Father was in North Korea at that time. And it also happened that Jesus appeared and was seen in the sky on the North Korean side. However, because I was not even a Christian at that time, I could not understand this information.

However, on a normal day, when I woke up in the morning, it was crowded and noisy, but on this day I woke up and it was quiet. I thought this was strange, and I found out that the night before, the neighborhood office staff and the police had come with a truck and had put the young people in the truck and taken them away.

Because there were many young people if you went to the places where refugees live, the neighborhood office employees together with the police had come to the dormitory location at Goryeo Theological Seminary at night and put all the young people in a truck and taken them away.

The room where we had been staying was the rightmost room of the Quonset hut, the first one from the main gate. But except for people in our room, they took away everyone else. Even though the first room was easy to find, strangely, leaving out that room only, they entered and took them away. We did not know anything and were just sleeping.

One More Miracle in Busan

It was a miracle that I met my family at Cheonan Station and that we came down south together, and this incident in Busan was also

like a miracle. And then another miraculous thing happened.

At that time, next to Busan Pier 2, there was the 65th Communication Equipment Supply Depot belonging to the U.S. Military Logistics Command. Shortly after coming down from Daejeon to Busan, on July 21, I went there and got a job. I got a job easily because I was a third-year student in the Department of Electrical Engineering at Seoul National University, and I worked in the inventory control room there under the title of a technical assistant.

In the large warehouse next to Pier 2, all communication equipment was there, including the most important equipment such as transmitters, receivers, and generators that were supplied to the UN and ROK forces. There, the inventory control room was where all the inventory was coordinated and managed, and it controlled the entire incomings and outgoings of the warehouse. There were instructions on where to send what went out from there, and there was also a record about what goods were received and stocked.

No one could take people who were doing important jobs in the US military because they were essential. But on the way out from there to the house, everyone was in the same position.

One day I finished work and went home, and a truck was standing on the main road, and people were blowing whistles and going to and fro. They asked all the young people on the road to get on the truck, so I got on the truck too. There, the young men were conscripted into the army and were taken away. But since there were only a few, they told us all to get off. When I asked why, they said that the quota was full for today. That is why I was

able to go home safely from there.

Working as an Interpreter for the U.S. Engineer Combat Battalion

I made a determination in my mind that I would have to go to the front line now. In Seo Township, Busan, there was a marshaling area for U.S. troops, and all new U.S. troops entering Korea gathered there and were assigned and deployed by units, and left for the front line. I went there and filled out an application, and got a job as an interpreter in the 378th Combat Engineers Battalion from North Carolina, USA.

I resigned from the 65th Communication Equipment Supply Depot, and on the morning of the next day, on the 31st, I got on a truck and went straight to the front line with the American soldiers. Traveling via a dusty road, we went to Wonju that night. The unit was located above Hongcheon.

I was under the command of a headquarters company that was located in a battalion headquarters. I was the interpreter for Major Neil, who was the head of the S-3 operation at the battalion headquarters. At that time, there were a few large tents with no garrison facilities, and that was the unit. In the quarters, twenty people slept in a tent and lived the same way as the American soldiers. There was one houseboy, myself, who was an interpreter, and the remaining eighteen were U.S. soldiers. During the day, they each worked in their own department. I stayed with that unit until

September 25.

One day, I went out with a lieutenant to do reconnaissance. But there was a sniper there who fired at us. The sniper only fired one shot at that point. If a sniper continued shooting, his position would be exposed and he would get hit, so, it was like that. But fortunately, the bullet missed, and we came back safely, and after this, there were no significantly dangerous events.

Working as an Interpreter at the Headquarters of the UN Civil Aid Investigation Command in Seoul

I was working in Hongcheon, but I did not want it to be like this, so I decided to go to Seoul. There were no connections or appointments in Seoul. There were no buses going north of Hongcheon, so even thinking now about going to Seoul was difficult. How was I going to go? I still do not know how I made such a decision at that time, but I went to Seoul without a plan in mind.

At that time, even the Han River Bridge could not be crossed freely, and there was a need to cross the Han River Bridge in Seoul. However, I unconditionally entered the center of Seoul. On the site of the Lotte Hotel in Sogong-dong, there used to be the Bando Hotel, which had been built during the old days of the Japanese Colonial Period. Later, that building was demolished and the Lotte Hotel was built. On the 8th floor of that Bando Hotel, there was an important unit of the U.S. military, which was the United Nations Civil Aid Investigation Command (UNCAIC). But

without knowing anything, I went up to the 8th floor and boldly said that I would like to get a job. Then I became employed there. It was difficult for someone to make an introduction, but I came to climb up suddenly.

There was a U.S. colonel commander. I also paid for the river crossing certificate there and consulted for all Korean businesses there. I stayed there until March 25, 1952, while interpreting for the Department of Agriculture and Forestry. I worked on the 8th floor, and the staff accommodation was at the International Hotel in Hoehyeon-dong. Meals were served at neighborhood restaurants, and I went with the Korean staff. A former classmate of Seoul National University's Liberal Arts College, whom I met there and lived with, was former UN Ambassador Park Geun.

Air Force Service and Study in Busan

While I was working, I heard a rumor that from April 1, 1952, a teacher, evacuated from Seoul National University, was established in Daesin-dong, Busan, and started studying again. So I quit my job in Seoul, went down to Busan on March 25, went to the university headquarters, registered, and started studying. The war was going on when I was in my junior year, so I enrolled for the senior year and graduated in March of the following year.

At that time, the ROK Air Force was recruiting candidates for the 1st Special Academic Officers. At first, the Air Force bought ten training aircraft, the Geonguk-ho, with public donations. That

is what the Air Force was all about. After the Korean War broke out, when the U.S. troops entered, our Air Force pilots went to Japan and acquired the F51 Mustang propeller fighters. From then on, the Korean Air Force began to be equipped with fighter jets and in 1951 the Air Force began to expand. So at that time, when recruiting about 210 college graduates, I took the exam, got trained in Daejeon for four months, and was commissioned as a first lieutenant in the Air Force.

When I finished my cadet training and was commissioned, I received the Air Force Chief of Staff Award. I was initially assigned to the 50th Weather Squadron. In the Air Force, weather conditions are important, so a unit that forecasts daily weather information and announces it to the entire Air Force is a weather squadron. I was deployed there and worked there for about four months.

Then, after that appointment, I went to the Air Force Headquarters. The Air Force headquarters was located at Dalseong Primary School in Daegu, and I used to work there in the Operations Department. When we created the unit, we set the number and rank of officers and soldiers to support the formation of the unit. At that time, I translated a book called *Air Force Organization* of the United States Air Force to be used in the Korean Air Force.

Transfer to Seoul and Joining the Unification Church

In 1955, while I was working at the Daegu Air Force

Headquarters, the Air Force Headquarters moved to Yeouido, Seoul. At that time, there were no facilities in Yeouido, only tents. When I first moved to Seoul, for the first time, I was able to go home on Sunday.

So one day, when I went home, my mother said that she went to church. When I asked her what kind of church it was, she said it was just called Seoul Church. Do you know what the Seoul Church is? But my mother said, "Now, the last days have come, and judgment is coming, just like in the days of Noah's flood." "No, what do you mean?" I said. In the Bible, there is a story of Noah's judgment of the flood, and she explained, "Even though Noah told them to enter the ark, they did not come, so he just closed the door and the flood came, and they all died." Such a time is coming soon. So I asked, "How is it coming?" She said, "The Lord is coming again." There is a prophecy of the Second Coming, which means that the Lord has come. So I answered, "Oh, if the Lord has come, we have to go."

That was before April 17, and when I asked my mother to go, she said there was a special assembly. That day, opportunely, was Easter. So she said, let us go in a little while. So I could not go that day and went back to the base again, and together with my mother, we went back to the Heungin-dong Church on the night of Wednesday, April 20. It was said that the Lord had come and had been seen.

There was a worship service that Wednesday night. At that time, could you know who Father was? The President of the Association, Yu Hyowon, was sitting on a chair, and while the

family members were sitting on the floor, they worshiped. Then someone came out and preached. I later found out that person was Father. He was preaching, and the words he said were the same things that I had thought. So I was very impressed.

After the sermon, Father came to where I was. My mother introduced me. Father looked at me for a long time, and then he reached out his hand, and I took Father's hand, and we shook hands. Father told me to listen to the Principle once. So, I said "Yes" and promised. After that, because I worked on Saturday, I did not have time, but I went to the Heungin-dong Church and listened to the Word several times before joining. The truth is, I decided on joining the day I first heard Father's words. So the day I joined was April 20, 1955.

My Father's Relationship with True Father during the Evacuation Course

Following the outbreak of the war in 1950, and after being released from prison in Heungnam on October 14, Father came to Pyeongyang accompanied by two of his disciples and departed on the southern course of the evacuation. After that, the party arrived in Heukseok-dong, Seoul, on December 27, 1950. Heukseok-dong was the place where Father spent his student days. From October 1945, while living in Sangdo-dong, which is located next to Heukseok-dong, Father spent six months at Pastor Kim Baekmun's Israel Monastery's Seoul Church.

Father's party looked for the house of Gwak Nopil, an ex-classmate, but they had evacuated and were not there, so they stayed at the house of Mrs. Lee Gibong, the former owner of the boarding house. At that time, between December 28 and 30, Father was questioned on the street and was suspected of being a new conscript. At that time, there was no police station in Heukseok-dong and only a police stand, so Father had to go to the Neighborhood Administrative Office with the police.

The Neighborhood Administrative Office was the place that managed the entire Heukseok-dong area and since the Japanese Colonial Period, the person in charge of the association was called the commander-in-chief. At that time, Yeongdeungpo and Gangnam were one district, but the commander-in-chief had considerable authority. The police made Father go there to ask the commander-in-chief's opinion. As soon as the commander-in-chief saw Father, he ordered the police, "Since this person is a person who will absolutely not do anything bad, let him go free." Father almost was in a lot of trouble again. So, doubts about Father were cleared, and Father came out safely and was set free. After that, Father left Seoul and went back on the road south again to Busan.

After I joined on April 20, 1955, on August 1, 1970, I was inaugurated as the second president of the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity. On July 24, 1970, the president of the Association, Yu Hyowon, was sanctified, and I asked Grandmother Ji Seungdo, who was praying, "What will happen to the next president of the association?" Grandmother Ji said that God said the next president of the association would be a

person who is prepared. So I was wondering if that was the case, but on August 1, Father appointed me as the president of the association, so I had no choice but to be surprised.

However, on October 29, 1972, just two years after I took office as president of the association, my father was sanctified. I became busy due to my father's funeral, so I went in order to report to Father the news of my father's sanctification. After listening to my report, Father stayed for a while and then suddenly told me to make my father's funeral as a funeral for the president of the association (the association's seonghwa ceremony). My father did not go through the formalities of entering the association, so how could this be, and because I was bewildered and blank, Father told me to do it again as the president of the association. So I said, "Yes. I understand," and went out; at that time, I proceeded with the schedule for three days and finished the ceremony.

After that, Father did not say anything. So I, too, finished with it and did not even think about it. Years passed in that way, and in March 2007, Father selected representative families of the five North Korean provinces and called them to Hawaii to have a special meeting.

But just that month, my son-in-law Shin Inseok's brain tumor surgery had been performed at a hospital in Chicago, USA. So I was not in Korea; so my wife became the representative of Hwanghae Province, and my younger sister Kim Jeongtan (wife of Pastor Na Imryeol) went to Hawaii instead of me as the representative of South Hamgyeong Province.

Every morning there was a Hundokhoe, and one morning,

my father's spirit body came to Kim Jeongtan, and she was gasping and shedding tears with a runny nose, Father saw it and left after the Hoondokhoe, and then came back. Then, in front of Jeongtan, at the end of 1950, while on the road to escape from Seoul, when Father was caught by the police and went to the Neighborhood Administrative Office in Heukseok-dong, Jeongtan's father, who was the commander-in-chief in Heukseok-dong, said that Father overcame the difficulties safely because he had testified that he was a good person and not a bad person.

My father served as a commander-in-chief in Heukseok-dong even before liberation, and he evacuated during the war, but after the restoration of Seoul, even when he came back to Seoul, he served as a commander-in-chief. At that time, when the police held Father, my father gave him a good guarantee, and he was released safely. However, Father did not mention it at all, and it was only at the Hawaiian meeting that he spoke about it for the first time.

I came to understand the reason why my younger sister Jeongtan was thankful and shed tears and mucus hearing those words. Also, hearing that story, I too came to know for the first time why Father made my father's *seonghwa* ceremony to be an HAS-UWC *seonghwa* ceremony. When I reported to True Father that my father passed away in 1972, it seems that Father knew and confirmed that fact through the spirit realm. After that, Father sometimes talked about my father in public. For reference, here is a brief introduction to two paragraphs from Father's anthology.

Kim Young Hwi's father earned money in

Heukseok-dong in Seoul, and bought a good modern house. In the time of Japanese rule, the people of Japan sponsored it, and it functioned as a model house in Heukseok-dong. When I went to and came out of North Korea, I said, "Is not this person a sham? Is it true he lived here or not?" When you do, you testify. It is true that he bought it. I know because he graduated from school. Because I am famous, Kim Young Hwi's father also became a guardian. When you came out of the North, your identity guarantee was in that house. I'm the first to speak of it. From son, daughter, and mother, all completely became members of the Unification Church. (597-196-7, 2008.9.11, *Cheon Jeong Won*).

This is when Kim Young Hwi had a house in Heukseok-dong. When I was in school, I went over this hill, and Kim Young Hwi's house was about eighty meters away, so because it was a well-built house, I went to investigate who the lady of the house was. When I came out of North Korea, the people of Hamgyeong Province became witnesses, guaranteeing my identity. He said he was a student at the Gyeongseong Practical School of Commerce and Industry. (597-234, 2008.9.12, *Cheon Jeong gung*).

Education and Training of Power Generation Engineers in the United States

In 1955, while I was working at the Yeouido Air Force Headquarters, I met an engineering friend on the streets of Seoul. At that time, the Korea Electric Power Company (KEPCO) and the Korean Ministry of Commerce and Industry were jointly recruiting technicians and sending them to the United States for training. At that time, all power plants in Korea were broken during the war, so in Busan, power generation ships were borrowed from foreign countries, floated in the port, and their power was used. It was only 30,000 kW. If you intend to develop industry, the most urgent thing is electricity

In such a situation, the United States was building three power plants in Korea. However, since all of the Korean power plants were outdated, they would have to be able to be put in motion by sending technicians to train in the United States and then bring them back. So, the U.S. Government and the Ministry of Commerce and Industry reached an agreement to send technical students to the United States. So, I took the test and passed, and the total number of KEPCO employees and newly selected technicians was forty-three. All expenses for studying abroad in the U.S. were borne by the U.S. government, and all of my discharge procedures as a soldier were also done by the government.

After I was discharged from the military on May 16, 1955, I started the procedures in order to go to the United States. During

the physical examination, X-rays were taken, to check there were no abnormalities in the lungs. No hospitals were accepted to conduct these tests other than sanitary hospitals run by American doctors. So I went to be checked, and fortunately, it came out that there was no problem, and I passed.

Arrival and departure procedures were carried out at Yeouido Airport. At that time, there were no buildings or facilities in Yeouido, and there was only the runway. There was something like a wooden one-man guard post where my passport was stamped, and I went to board the plane. The plane only flew to Japan, so we stayed in Japan for three days, then changed planes again and went to San Francisco, USA.

So it was decided that we were to train in the U.S. for one year. However, because the power plant was built quickly, the training period was shortened to eight months. For the first four months, we studied at California State University in Berkeley, and the last four months were for hands-on practice at a U.S. thermal power plant and field trips to study facilities and factories of various companies. I left for the United States on June 16, less than a month after being discharged from the military in May 1955, and returned home on February 16, 1956. When I studied at California State University in the United States, while I lived and studied in the I-House (international student dormitory) inside the school, all accommodations and meals were provided there. During the thermal power plant training period, private houses were each rented on a monthly basis in San Francisco and Oakland while four or five people lived communally in one house and commuted to work.

During field trips, we stayed at hotels in each city.

While I was in the United States, in Korea, the July 4 Incident occurred, in which Father and several leaders were imprisoned in Seodaemun Prison. Because my father was against my joining the church, he cut out bad newspaper articles related to our church and sent them to me. I threw them away without even looking at those things.

When I came back from America, I was going to give Father a present, and I bought a hat, a shirt, and shoes. But since I did not know the size, I had no choice but to roughly choose and buy. When I came back, I gave Father the presents, but the shoes were too big, so I gave them to Mr. No Donghwi afterward, and Father wore the hat and shirt. This was the time when Father was released from Seodaemun Prison in October 1955 and moved to the Cheongpa-dong Headquarters Church.

In April 1956, Father told me to come and stay at Cheongpa-dong Church. My father was against it, so at that time, I came out of the house and left. My mother witnessed to my two younger sisters before me.

Samcheok Power Plant Work and Pioneering Churches

While I had been living in the church since April 1956, I continued for more than two years a life of commuting to and from the power plant. Then, on October 13, 1958, a transfer order to Samcheok Power Plant appeared, and I left for

Samcheok. My father was going to stop my church activities, and he went to the headquarters of KEPCO and requested that I be moved to Samcheok. On October 13, I went to Gangneung by plane and took a jeep that came for me from the company and went to Samcheok. There were no bridges in Okgye, so we had to go and cross the river by jeep.

I remember seeing on that day Kim Jimi, a famous actress in Gangneung, at the airport intending to go to Seoul.

Anyway, that is how I came to work at the Samcheok Power Plant, and at the time, we did not have a church in Samcheok. So I wanted to say, "I'm right." "I did well." The power plant was located on the beach, so it took about five minutes by taxi to get to downtown Samcheok. I got a room there and started a church. That is how Samcheok Church was first pioneered. The place for my room and board was in the company, and so I worked at the company during the day, and on nights and Sundays, I did church activities.

The sister of the mother of Won Simhui, who is the wife of 36 family Pastor Lee Yohan, was a devout Christian, and at that time she joined our church. She came to Samcheok, and while I was working during the day, she witnessed and maintained the church. After work, I spent every evening with church family members, talking and sleeping in the church at night, and taking a taxi to work in the morning.

Even if I went on a business trip for a few days because I had business matters at the headquarters in Seoul, it was very difficult and I very much disliked separating from family members.

Since we talked every evening and shared our feelings together, it was emotionally difficult to leave. Father once used to say, “Even if we live, we live together, and if we die, we die together.” At that time, I felt, “Hey, you said that because that’s how you felt.” It was a precious time to feel the true love of family members.

Meanwhile, in the summer of 1959, Father came on a tour. Father came in a 747 jeep, and the driver was Mr. Mun Seonggyun, and the attendants were Ms. Choe Wonbok and Elder Song Douk. At that time, he did a nationwide twenty-one-day tour, and he came to Samcheok and slept there for two days. The environment was not good because it was a mud house, but we cleaned the room and prepared new bedding. As my father left Samcheok, he said in encouraging words, “You prepared well, and it would have been impossible if you had not come here.”

After leaving Samcheok, Father went south and collected commemorative pebbles (巡石) from Uljin Beach. This was between Samcheok and Uljin, and he picked up these commemorative pebbles from there, returned to the headquarters church, and shared them with the church family. At that time, Father told me that in the future, the church family should tour that entire twenty-one-day course.

Third National Missionary Retreat and Three Families’ Blessing

In February 1960, the Third National Missionary Retreat was held, and at that time, the young family members who could not attend

the First Retreat were instructed to attend. But since the training period was forty days, how could I attend while working at a power plant? So, I applied to the head office and said that I had to take a break because I was sick. Then, since there was a KEPCO sanatorium in Hwacheon, they told me to go there. So, I decided to rest for forty days and left Samcheok.

I took a bus and walked more and entered the resort and registered. Then that day, without even unpacking and without even speaking to the sanatorium, I left for Seoul. I would have been caught out, if I had reported it, so I just registered and then left. I walked from Hwacheon until arriving at Chuncheon, and then I took a bus and went to Seoul. In that way, I was able to attend the forty-day retreat.

But in the meantime, a big problem arose. The word had gone around that I had said I was sick, so they had sent me to recuperate, but now I had gone missing. However, since I was an engineer who had been to the United States, I could not be fired. To educate me had cost a huge amount of money, so how could they just throw that away? In this way, I was able to safely get through that crisis.

The retreat ended and it was said that there would be blessings for three families. At Hanjeon headquarters, sometime after the forty-day treatment period had passed, I was appointed to work at the head office in Samcheok. It was the power generation department.

Time passed while we got through it one way or another; our couple was selected by Father as one of the three families. We

were engaged, and then we were blessed on April 16, right after True Parents' Holy Marriage Ceremony on April 11. I was able to spend this period while working at the Seoul headquarters. I was at church while preparing for the blessing, and Father also bought clothes for the three families and gave us various graces.

Conclusion

In this way, I have briefly looked back on my turbulent life, from my birth to our blessed marriage. As with everything, I did not have my own thoughts; they arose following the will of God.

In the end, everything that happened in the army was nothing that I intended, and I feel like everything was guided from the spirit world. Judging by the fact that there have been amazing things that I cannot even think about now, even if there were many ups and downs that each of us was unaware of, everything seems to have been going according to God's program.

Everyone, I think all of you are also the same. It is that God put a lot of effort into choosing each one of us, one by one, before His will, so that we can come to this position. So, I think we should not forget the fact that we have worked hard for ourselves.

The Truth of God's Providence

President Kim Young Hwi's Testimony

Korean First edition published: July 4, 2022

English First edition published: October 14, 2023

Author: Kim Young Hwi

Place of Publication: Planning publication Moonyoung

Address: 391 Yeongdeungpo-ro, Yeongdeungpo-gu, Seoul
#901 Lucent Officetel, Singil-dong

Publication Report No: 2014-000108

Registration Date: August 5, 2014

Where to order: +82-10-5182-9089

ISBN 979-11-975495-5-7(03230)

| Price \$15.00 |